



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 09

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Table of Contents

[Realms In The Firmament](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 801: A Huge Conspiracy!](#)

[Chapter 802: Sky Thunder Landmines!](#)

[Chapter 803: Wings in the Sky!](#)

[Chapter 804: Broken Clue!](#)

[Chapter 805: Cold Moon Palace!](#)

[Chapter 806: Never Offend Me!](#)

[Chapter 807: Moonlight Trial!](#)

[Chapter 808: Floor After Floor...](#)

[Chapter 809: Nature's Perfection; Nine Exquisite Body!](#)

[Chapter 810: Heaven's Selection!](#)

[Chapter 811: Gods Envy The Elite?](#)

[Chapter 812: I Hate You!](#)

[Chapter 813: What A Monster!](#)

[Chapter 814: Wind, Cloud, Thunder and Lightning](#)

[Chapter 815: Disciple Brother Ye](#)

[Chapter 816: Genius in Conservation!](#)

[Chapter 817: Battle in the Old Days](#)

[Chapter 818: What I Lack](#)

[Chapter 819: Three Phases!](#)

[Chapter 820: The Path to Become Immortal!](#)

[Chapter 821: Beginning of Hell!](#)

[Chapter 822: 2500 Kilograms!](#)

[Chapter 823: Outperform!](#)

[Chapter 824: Blade Sharpening!](#)

[Chapter 825: Disengaged Erhuo!](#)

[Chapter 826: Where Are the Fish?](#)

[Chapter 827: Adorable Cat!](#)

[Chapter 828: Tell a Thief about Theft!](#)

[Chapter 829: Comforted Erhuo!](#)

[Chapter 830: The Space Changed!](#)

[Chapter 831: Assassins Went Up!](#)

[Chapter 832: Sky Ice Palace, Jun Yinglian!](#)

[Chapter 833: Who Else Knows?](#)

[Chapter 834: Go out with the Sword in Hand!](#)
[Chapter 835: The Return of Nantian!](#)
[Chapter 836: My Improvement Has Been Limited](#)
[Chapter 837: Clan Dispute!](#)
[Chapter 838: Stay!](#)
[Chapter 839: Who Is the Murderer?](#)
[Chapter 840: Where Is Your Son?](#)
[Chapter 841: His Name Is Ye Xiao!](#)
[Chapter 842: The God Level Special Training](#)
[Chapter 843: Unprecedented!](#)
[Chapter 844: Worth Dying!](#)
[Chapter 845: Lei Dadi's Boast](#)
[Chapter 846: This Is A Tragedy!](#)
[Chapter 847: Generation to Generation](#)
[Chapter 848: Life Origin Dan!](#)
[Chapter 849: Gratitude Is Gratitude; Hatred Is Hatred!](#)
[Chapter 850: Who Was Beaten?](#)
[Chapter 851: Breakthrough?](#)
[Chapter 852: Fast Improvement](#)
[Chapter 853: The Ground Competition for Prime Disciple Honor!](#)
[Chapter 854: Devastating!](#)
[Chapter 855: Ground Competition of Dream Origin Stage](#)
[Chapter 856: Next!](#)
[Chapter 857: Can't Stop Feeling Relaxed!](#)
[Chapter 858: Peerless Genius Is a Threat!](#)
[Chapter 859: Training Partner!](#)
[Chapter 860: Visit the Qiong-Hua Palace!](#)
[Chapter 861: Give a Hand](#)
[Chapter 862: Yours and Mine](#)
[Chapter 863: The Past](#)
[Chapter 864: Motherliness!](#)
[Chapter 865: Incurrable!](#)
[Chapter 866: Foodie!](#)
[Chapter 867: Blood Bead!](#)
[Chapter 868: Here Is a Monster](#)
[Chapter 869: Visitor in Cold Moon Palace!](#)
[Chapter 870: Two Great Prime Masters](#)
[Chapter 871: Murder!](#)
[Chapter 872: Terribly Shameless!](#)

[Chapter 873: On the Verge of a Fight!](#)

[Chapter 874: Survival!](#)

[Chapter 875: Independence of Cold Moon Palace](#)

[Chapter 876: Between Life and Death](#)

[Chapter 877: Back to Life!](#)

[Chapter 878: Witnessing a Miracle!](#)

[Chapter 879: Death Is a Perfect Protection](#)

[Chapter 880: A Tale](#)

[Chapter 881: Sky Soul Hall!](#)

[Chapter 882: Fierce Blade](#)

[Chapter 883: The Past!](#)

[Chapter 884: Separate Ways!](#)

[Chapter 885: Break the Deadlock](#)

[Chapter 886: Housecleaning](#)

[Chapter 887: So Long!](#)

[Chapter 888: Poles Apart!](#)

[Chapter 889: Martial World Is Good](#)

[Chapter 890: Guan Lingxiao!](#)

[Chapter 891: What's Wrong With You?](#)

[Chapter 892: Black Cavalry Alliance!](#)

[Chapter 893: I Am Going Too!](#)

[Chapter 894: King of Horses!](#)

[Chapter 895: King Descended!](#)

[Chapter 896: Cause and Effect](#)

[Chapter 897: In the Black Cavalry Alliance](#)

[Chapter 898: How Many Enemies](#)

[Chapter 899: Laughter of the Monarch; Hero of Eternity!](#)

[Chapter 900: Immediate Effect!](#)

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 801: A Huge Conspiracy!

"However, we have to admit that not even one sect in the hundreds of thousands years history has ever controlled the entire Qing-Yun Realm. If this organization goes on what they are planning and the powerful sects in the world didn't have time to prepare for this, we may all get destroyed. Once all the powerful sects are utterly weakened, that secret organization will easily conquer the entire realm. It is just a matter of time. They are moving forward to a position that no one ever achieved in the history. Under the firmament, in this realm, who can stop them?"

Zhan Yunfei's face was dark. He didn't say anything. After a while, he suddenly made a palm strike.

The grudge that filled his chest had to be vent out. He made a palm strike with full power.

Suddenly, it made a big sound of explosion, as if a thunder struck down from the sky. An area of forest which was ten miles wide was suddenly swept out. Countless big trees became ashes flying away in the air!

There was a ten meters deep long fissure appeared on the ground! That was shocking!

"If I find out which fxcking organization it is, I will destroy it thoroughly. I will kill every living thing without mercy!" Zhan Yunfei gritted his teeth. His cheeks plumped up a bit as he fiercely shouted, "No mercy!"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "They are going on an enormous plan. No matter how careful they try to be, they will leak traces of it. Besides, we have already found one. We can go along the trace we have now and dig deep to the source.

"In fact, there are just a few people who have the power to do this.

"We were blinded. We were fighting enemies in the dark. That's why it was hard to figure it out. Now we finally sensed it and we have a rough image of their entire plan. Our enemy is exposed to the light now. The only thing we should do is to secretly investigate until we finally figure everything out.

"After all, that is not just a work of somebody ordinary.

"It is not just ordinarily vicious and vile.

"I have just stayed in this realm for a few days. I just know a little about the twelve great forces in this world. I wonder which force has the similar style of doing things. Elder Zhan, you should have something in your mind. Maybe it doesn't lead you to some specific conclusion yet, but as time goes by, you will get to it."

Ye Xiao spoke word by word.

Zhan Yunfei's eyes lit up as he said, "That's right! You are right!"

"However, we have to return to the sect and report this to the Primary Master and the Greatest Elder first," Zhan Yunfei spoke fiercely. "We can't do it alone. Chongxiao, from now on, you have to keep all this in mind. Never tell anybody about it, unless those in charge of our sect ask you. Otherwise, I am afraid you will get yourself killed."

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "Yes, I won't."

Even if Zhan Yunfei didn't warn him, he would never do that. He was not a fool!

Such a great conspiracy concerned all the powerful forces in the world. He was one of the weakest in this realm. If he got involved, he would get himself smashed into ashes at any second.

Even Zhan Yunfei had to be extremely cautious. If he investigated this overtly, he would die soon in silence.

Ye Xiao was sure about that.

Luckily, even though Zhan Yunfei was arrogant like hell, he

knew his real position in the world. He knew this was something beyond his power. He had to discuss this with the people in charge of the sect. He was sober...

...

When they both walked back from the forest, Ye Xiao was showing a gloomy face, while Zhan Yunfei was showing a solemn one.

Ye Xiao was thinking, [Such a huge conspiracy must have been there for more than two years. I left Qing-Yun Realm just over one year ago.]

[I traveled this world in the previous life, yet I have never noticed any trace of this!]

[I was that powerful, yet I felt nothing of it... This organization is obviously rigorous... Other than that, does this organization have anything to do with my death too?]

They walked back to the crowd and saw the girl standing up already. She looked happy, with a smile on the face. She seemed like another person now.

The others congratulated her with kind words and she responded politely with a smile.

Zhan Yunfei saw the warm and happy smile on Xiao Mufei's face. He was lost in thoughts.

He felt it reckless to make this thing happen though. Maybe he should seriously think about this for a second time earlier.

The enemy was such a big organization, with such great plans, vicious like hell, doing great in using the weak points of humanity. How could they allow a girl like her to go over to their enemy?

What if this was a part of their more vicious plan?

What if this was what they were planning on Xiao Mufei? Were they using Xiao Mufei's kindness?

Even if Rongrong did luckily get away from that organization and actually treated Xiao Mufei as her father with her full heart, how would the organization let her do this?

Maybe... after this, they wouldn't give up hunting Rongrong down until she was dead.

Zhan Yunfei knew about Xiao Mufei clearly. After Xiao Mufei's daughter died, he was totally broken, as if he was ten years older in one night!

He should be a rising star of the sect back then, but because of his loss, he fell.

He hadn't improved a bit at all. Instead, he had become weaker in the recent years.

Now he had a bright hope. This girl must be the last light in Xiao Mufei's life...

What if... this girl didn't really treat Xiao Mufei with sincerity... what if she got killed at the end...

If that tragically happened, Xiao Mufei would definitely fall to the bottom of desperation. His life would be hopeless and he would become like a walking dead!

The enemy was such a great organization. They had countless assassins and powerful cultivators. They wouldn't allow Xiao Rongrong to live! They wouldn't want their secret to be revealed! Xiao Rongrong was a Dream Origin Stage cultivator. To kill her, it would only take a flick of a finger...

If the organization truly wanted to kill her... even the entire Cold Moon Palace wouldn't be able to save her!

...

Chapter 802: Sky Thunder Landmines!

Looking at Xiao Mufei, who had never laughed so happily for so many years and was now full of joy and happiness with love in the eyes as a father... Zhan Yunfei didn't know what to say.

What could he say anyway?

How dare him?

He couldn't and didn't dare to break such a harmonious scene—the happiest moment in Xiao Mufei's entire life!

He had to keep his face stiff as he spoke in a deep voice, "Congratulation."

He then took out a space ring as a gift to Xiao Mufei. Nobody knew what was inside the ring, not even Zhan Yunfei himself. He was totally blank at the moment. He didn't know what he was doing.

The only thing he still knew and felt was how insincere he was at the moment.

Luckily, he still sounded the same as how he usually spoke to others. Although he might be a bit colder, he still said something nice. Besides, he gave a space ring as a gift already. Nobody noticed anything wrong about him at all. Except for Ye Xiao, nobody heard the helplessness behind his 'congratulation'.

It seemed he was watching something tragic happening, yet he couldn't stop it. It might burst into tragedy the next minute or the next day... He didn't know. He couldn't stop it.

What hurt him the most was that... he made all this happen...

Ye Xiao felt pity for Zhan Yunfei.

He was having sympathy for this man, one of his biggest enemies in the previous life.

He actually didn't think he was a vile and accursed person

anymore. Was an accursed person always a piteous person too?

...

"There. There are Sky Thunders buried in the ground over there."

Rongrong pointed at somewhere in the front after leading the crowd dozens of miles ahead.

It was a valley with mountains on two sides.

It was such a dangerous place.

If they walked into it unprepared and triggered the landmines, the explosion would make the mountains collapse. Most of them would die there, only a few could survive.

Ye Chongxiao, the weakest in the crowd would definitely die!

Zhan Yunfei frowned. He looked at that place and then looked around. He humphed and said, "Just a little trick! Wait here! I'll take care of it!"

Then he jumped and disappeared.

About an hour later, he was back.

He came back boldly, with his white clothes flying in the air. He seemed casual and enjoying.

He didn't do this just to show off though. He waved a hand and some big buckets showed up. The buckets flew to the sky and cracked. There was something inside the buckets and it was pouring out...

That was kerosene!

Zhan Yunfei threw out those buckets. There were thousands of them. Nobody knew where he got them from. He looked like an expert in playing fire. The entire valley was covered by kerosene after a while.

Far away in the valley, somebody exclaimed because of the

kerosene.

Zhan Yunfei laughed coldly. He waved his hand and there went out a fire, shooting to the valley like a fire dragon!

It was just like a dragon. The fire was about a hundred meters long and a few meters wide. It was like a fire dragon flying over to the valley. It lit up everything and created a sea of flames. After seconds, flames covered hundreds of miles.

They looked to the valley and saw a few people awkwardly running away.

Zhan Yunfei held his two arms on the chest, staring at them with a cold face.

The next moment!

- Boom! Boom, boom, boom... -

A series of explosion burst with huge sounds.

The next moment, the sounds were getting louder. That must be the explosion of the Sky Thunder landmines. The flames triggered the landmines!

- Boom! -

A mushroom cloud appeared and rushed up to the sky!

At this moment, they saw a man getting bombed up by the cloud rushing up to the sky... What a marvelous experience for that man!

The mushroom cloud was still a cloud, but not as normal as the clouds in the sky!

Nobody felt Zhan Yunfei moving, but he suddenly appeared in the sky. He rushed up to the sky in the heat of the flames. He grabbed that man with his two hands as if he was catching a chicken.

"Pah!" He then threw him out.

When Zhan Yunfei saw that man, he thought it must be a

superior cultivator. He thought that man was using the power of the rushing mushroom cloud to get away. Zhan Yunfei tried to be careful when he was about to grab that man as he was about to fight a powerful enemy. However, when he grabbed that man, he realized the latter was not even close to powerful. This man was just an unlucky dude who accidentally got bombed up by the cloud and was already roasted by the heat. Zhan Yunfei only touched the roasted flesh on that man's bones.

He was disgusted. That was such an extraordinary experience for him too!

The next moment, he started to fly around up in the air above the flames.

He was like a hawk flying in the sky. His eyes were like the eyes of a hawk, sharp, staring at the valley.

Whoever ever attempted to get away from the flames, he would see him.

The flames were rolling up on the ground. It was reaching about a hundred meters high. The smoke and heat were rushing up. However, he didn't seem like feeling it. He just kept staying in the sky.

He knew there must be enemies hiding down there.

They must have sent more than just a few stupid guys to do this.

There must be a leader.

The leader must be a powerful figure.

It must be somebody rather powerful, as he could hide in such a big fire for so long!

However, no matter how powerful he was, as long as the fire continued, he would give up and show himself. Even people who has reached the top of Dao Origin Stage couldn't stay calm and safe in such fire.

Chapter 803: Wings in the Sky!

Zhan Yunfei was still flying in the sky, looking around.

He was waiting for those people. He believed those people would flee away if he looked away or got down to rest. He wouldn't let go off such a chance to catch them.

He stayed in the sky observing, with a flow of spiritual qi in the body. He didn't want to miss any traces.

However, even a real hawk would get tired flying in the sky for such a long time.

After a while, he felt tired.

He started to fly lower.

As he expected, there were eyes in the flames watching him.

They were watching him! They didn't want to miss any possible chance to get away!

As long as Zhan Yunfei got down to the ground, he would lose sight of them. They would rush out and flee away immediately. The fire was scorching them, but they had to bear it.

At the moment, it was a competition of endurance.

There were two possible results. One, Zhan Yunfei would be exhausted and would go down to the ground. Those people would seize the opportunity and flee away. Two, they couldn't endure the scorching fire anymore and finally show themselves.

There was a big difference between the two sides though. If Zhan Yunfei couldn't hold it anymore, he would just get down and have a rest, giving those people a chance to get away.

However, if they couldn't stand the scorching fire anymore, they would either be killed or be burned!

That was why they were still enduring the heat and hiding down

there.

In fact, these people were unlucky. What they needed to do was just to kill a lucky guy who had just come to this world. Their biggest enemy should be Xiao Mufei, but Xiao Mufei was badly injured in the previous fights. It should be easy for them to finish the job!

However, unexpectedly, Cold Moon Palace actually sent their men over so quickly. They had never thought they would have to face Zhan Yunfei.

They definitely couldn't compare with Zhan Yunfei!

If they were caught by Zhan Yunfei, it would be even worse than death.

They would never be able to keep any secrets from him.

Nobody could keep a secret under Zhan Yunfei's torture.

Finally, Zhan Yunfei was exhausted. He was getting down. Those people were pleased. They couldn't make any sound, otherwise, they would cheer up loud. All they needed was just a second. For these people, one second was long enough to do many things! They could very possibly get away within one second!

However, at this moment, something flew up to the sky.

Two stones!

The stones were in regular size, as big as a fist. They were flying up hundreds of meters high aiming at Zhan Yunfei.

Precisely, they were flying toward Zhan Yunfei's feet!

The two stones were not very big, but they were so important for Zhan Yunfei at the moment. He had been staying in the sky because a flow of spiritual qi was operating in his body. He was consuming his energy so fast. He was running out of power at the moment. He had to get down to the floor and took a rest before he could fly up again. He had to hold another flow of spiritual qi in

the body.

However, he was in the air. There was nothing he could step on. There were trees though, but that was too far away! He couldn't reach the trees!

Zhan Yunfei was about to give it up, unexpectedly, he found two stones flying up to him.

The stones were flying to his feet.

He was thrilled. He changed his posture and firmly stepped on the two stones. He took a deep breath out and exhaled his spiritual qi. And then he inhaled to form another flow of spiritual qi. He felt totally refreshed in the chest!

The two stones didn't fall back down after being stepped by Zhan Yunfei. They continued flying up. Apparently, whoever threw the stones must have done it in full power.

The stones held Zhan Yunfei for a second and went on flying up over a dozen meters.

As the stones were about to fall down, Zhan Yunfei slightly stepped on the stones. The stones suddenly fell to the floor rapidly like shooting stars. Zhan Yunfei flew up high again like a hawk in the sky.

He was flying around again.

His sharp eyes were observing everything down in the flames.

Zhan Yunfei could stay in the air for a whole day as long as somebody kept throwing the stones for him like this.

His people would definitely continue without hesitation.

Everybody saw this. It wouldn't be a problem for any of them to help Zhan Yunfei!

The difficulty of all this was to figure out such a method!

In fact, the flying stones were really going on a perfect route and

whoever threw the stones wasn't really powerful enough. To lift a person up only a dozen meters high, that was weak!

Xiao Mufei and the others had held stones in their hands after watching how the stones helped Zhan Yunfei.

The enemies hiding in the flames sighed with despair.

There was no hope for them now.

Zhan Yunfei shouted in the sky, "Bastards, what are you going to do now? Come out and surrender! I will spare your pathetic lives!"

It was done. If those people didn't want to be burned to death, they would have to be caught by Zhan Yunfei. There was no other choice.

Ye Xiao shook his head. If he hadn't experience the life down in the Land of Han-Yang, if he hadn't fought Master Bai, hadn't worked with Zu Wuji, if he didn't know those people who had brilliant wit, if he didn't know how cruel the assassins' lives could be and how they could be cruel to themselves, he might as well believe those people had only two choices, to be burned or to be caught!

In fact, they did have a third option. They might not have to be burned, or to be caught by Zhan Yunfei!

The option...

In the flames, an old man sighed with sorrow on the face. Suddenly, he reached out his hand like lightning!

He wasn't going to attack Zhan Yunfei though. He was going to kill his six underlings!

Chapter 804: Broken Clue!

- Pah, pah, pah... -

Six sounds. Six men were slapped by their leader on the faces. Their heads were entirely smashed and became unrecognizable. They didn't even have time to exclaim. Six men died.

"Don't worry. I won't live on in degradation by myself. Let us go to hell together! I can't let the great plan be ruined in our hands. I won't give anybody any chance to leak anything about the great plan, not even myself!" the old man murmured. He then destroyed everything on the six men. He destroyed all the space rings.

The next moment, he broke everything he had, including his weapon, which had been with him for so many years!

After that, he still couldn't stop worrying, so he smashed the dead bodies of his underlings and threw them all into the fire. He just couldn't leave anything to Zhan Yunfei.

It took him seconds to do all these, but it still exposed him already. When he killed the six underlings, when he broke the space rings, there would radiate strange energy flows. Zhan Yunfei noticed it.

As soon as he noticed it, he shouted and flew over to the old man, holding his sword in the hand like a rainbow! He was staring at the old man fiercely.

The old man showed a wan smile and said, "Zhan Yunfei. Impressive. Good endurance. Good plan. What a shame you are never going to find out who we are! You are wasting your time!"

And then he focused his full power on his palm and hit on his own face without hesitation!

That palm hit made a sound of thunderstrike. This old man was actually a Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

It was such a powerful strike. His entire body, including his head, was hit and turned into pieces.

His body immediately flowed to the floor like a pile of mud.

As Zhan Yunfei got to the old man, what he found was already an unrecognizable dead man.

He couldn't tell the old man's body type, not to mention the face.

The only unbroken part of his body was the arm with the hand he used to kill himself!

Zhan Yunfei humphed and waved his sword. The next moment, he was heading back with that arm on his sword!

Xiao Mufei was waiting for him to return.

Finally, there was a glow of a sword shining and a sound of thunder. Zhan Yunfei got on the floor fast.

- Pah! -

He threw the arm on the floor and said, "Guys, come and look at this. Let's all think about it. There may be some trace left on this arm. It could be... a birthmark or some mark that was only made by some special martial art."

The girl Rongrong exclaimed because of fear. She was an assassin indeed, but to kill Xiao Mufei was her first mission. She was not really qualified to be an assassin yet. How could she not be scared by a broken and bloody arm?

Xiao Mufei and the others started to look at the arm immediately. They kept turning it over and over, hoping to find something useful.

Zhan Yunfei walked to Ye Xiao and said, "Chongxiao, is it you? Did you throw the two stones?"

Ye Xiao was surprised. "How did you know? Did you also focus on our side too?"

"No. I didn't have time to... But... If somebody else threw the stones, it wouldn't be so weak. Besides, it would be bigger stones..."

"Elder Zhan, are you praising me or teasing me... What else do you want to say about it?"

"Of course I am praising you. Anyways, the others wouldn't figure out that idea. They can't outwit you even if they think together."

Ye Xiao was surprised. He rubbed his nose and asked, "How did you bring over so much kerosene? Where did you get it?"

Zhan Yunfei answered arrogantly, "I robbed a sect nearby. I got all their kerosene. Hmm. It was not enough, so I took their rapeseed oil too..."

Ye Xiao was shocked, "Did you pay for it?"

"Pay for it?" Zhan Yunfei was surprised as if Ye Xiao was joking. "Why should I?"

Then he casually walked away with two hands behind the back.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

He found that Zhan Yunfei was sometimes quite a funny guy.

They had a beautiful victory on this. However, there was no clue that leads to the secret organization. They had been checking on that broken arm for a long time, but nobody found anything useful. Zhan Yunfei took over the arm at the end. He decided to take it back to the sect. Maybe people in the sect could find something, although he knew it was very unlikely!

Nothing else happened next. They were in peace all the way back to the sect.

Nothing happened.

Ye Xiao felt unaccommodated already.

There was one thing not so good... Since Zhan Yunfei and his

men arrived, it became impossible for Ye Xiao to leave this crowd...

Zhan Yunfei hadn't stop watching Ye Xiao till they reached the sect. He spent over twenty hours watching Ye Xiao in a day. He was so concentrated as if he was watching his most beloved lady. Ye Xiao didn't dare to say anything.

Could he say 'please stop watching me! It's scary!'

That would be a huge problem. Zhan Yunfei was watching him with his spiritual mind. How did Ye Chongxiao know a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator was watching him with his spiritual mind?

That showed Zhan Yunfei how extraordinary Ye Xiao was!

Why was he so extraordinary then?

That would be a huge problem!

...

When they finally saw the gate of the sect, everybody sighed. "The sect did close the gate..."

Ye Xiao looked up to the mountain and saw only clouds and fog. There was nothing else. He just couldn't see it.

Before Ye Xiao said anything, Zhan Yunfei was leading everybody else into the cloud. They were actually walking on the cloud like they were on the ground. They were walking up higher and higher, but nothing changed. They were still surrounded by cloud, as if they were in the heavens.

Ye Xiao followed them ahead. He could feel his feet stepping on something firm. There was grass too. But he just couldn't see anything down under his feet.

The closed gate was invisible. It couldn't even be seen by spiritual mind!

...

Chapter 805: Cold Moon Palace!

"It is closed..." A disciple sighed. "Now I have this feeling. I feel it is better to get beaten up everyday inside than hanging outside the sect in the martial world..."

The other disciples all stayed silent and then sighed. It seemed it reminded them of something.

In the cloud, nobody saw their faces. However, everybody heard the sound of the tears dripping...

They had lost so many brothers out there...

Mountain gate closed...

Ye Xiao heard it and suddenly, an image of a humble and honest man showed up in his brain. That man was speaking, "When I first got into the sect, the mountain gate closed after I had cultivated half a year. Back then... I got beaten one hundred and seventy-six times in one day..."

Ye Xiao sighed.

[Fang Dalong.]

[I will avenge you!]

[I swear to heavens! I swear that I will avenge Fang Dalong! I will uproot that organization and wipe them out!]

A few disciples heard Ye Xiao's sigh. They started to comfort him. "Actually, the competition fights are not so terrible. Chongxiao, you are in the lowest league. You will definitely get beaten... But relax. We all will take care of you. Our brothers, they won't really beat you up that hard..."

"That's right. Don't be afraid. It is not a big deal. We just need to beat somebody or get beaten. That's all. If you get beaten, you will have a chance to beat somebody else. We believe you have a great talent. You will become the one who beat up everybody else

someday..."

As they tried to comfort him, some started to gloat.

"I thought Chongxiao was lucky. It turns out the mountain gate closed this earlier than we thought... He hasn't officially become one of us yet, but the gate is closed..."

"He will get beaten three hundred times a day... I bet!"

"Pah! Nobody wants to bet against you. He will definitely get beaten up over three hundred times and break the record..."

"That's right. There is no doubt."

As they were talking and laughing, someone suddenly sighed. "It's a shame that Dalong and the others..."

Suddenly, everybody was silent.

"This is life!" The voice of Zhan Yunfei came over from inside the cloud. "Life is unpredictable. One kills or gets killed in the martial world. We all will end like them. Why are you still so sad? If you have the time to weep, you have the time to cultivate! If you get killed, that means you are weak! You die because you are weak, so you deserve to die! You don't want to be killed, then you should better work hard to be the one who kills! Simple!"

"We show our strength by living! One will only die for his weakness! You can complain how miserable your life is. Go ahead. But it is nonsense! If you can't understand this, you don't deserve to live in the martial world! Why don't you just marry a woman and have a kid in some shxt hole!"

Everybody just followed him silently. They all wanted to argue and speak something filthy!

They all thought Zhan Yunfei was too cold-blooded and vicious at the moment.

They really couldn't believe how he could say that.

However, Zhan Yunfei was a great cultivator in the sect. Nobody

dared to challenge him. They had to bury the anger in their hearts and try not to reveal it.

Only Ye Xiao understood him. Zhan Yunfei was not a cold-blooded man. He knew that Zhan Yunfei just wanted these men to work harder instead of wasting time moaning...

However, no matter how nice Zhan Yunfei was, he always talked differently...

Ye Xiao thought, [Well, it seems he has a fantastic skill to naturally offend people and make people hate him. That is so... talented...]

[Anyway, I guess I am a member of Cold Moon Palace now. I don't think I can get away in a short time.]

[There is no other option...]

[I wonder whether this is a good start or not for me to begin my life in Qing-Yun Realm?]

[Anyway... I guess I can just wait and see. There is nothing else to expect now...]

They had walked half a day in the cloud. Ye Xiao could feel they were walking upward all along.

He was surprised. He never knew that Cold Moon Palace would be located so high.

As he remembered, it shouldn't be that high...

Finally, when he started to feel sour on the legs, he saw a bright light ahead of them.

Finally, they walked out the cloud.

What he saw was a huge archway!

There were three huge words on the archway, Cold Moon Palace!

It was shining in the sky.

Zhan Yunfei showed a cold face, with his hands behind the back.

A disciple ran over to them and said, "Great Master Zhan, you are back!"

Zhan Yunfei truly was in a high position in Cold Moon Palace. Otherwise, he wouldn't be called Great Master.

Zhan Yunfei was calm. He led the others across the archway.

Behind them, the huge bell ring sounded. The disciple on duty rang the bell to inform the sect that Zhan Yunfei was back.

Ye Xiao used to be a great figure in Qing-Yun Realm in his previous life, but he never had a good connection to the great sects. He hadn't entered the seven great sects ever. This was his first time he stepped into one of the seven great sects!

The mountain in front of them was actually a huge hall. It looked like a huge crescent moon on a huge mountain.

There was a huge plaza in front of the hall.

As they stepped on the plaza, a middle-aged man walked over fast and saluted. He then spoke in a low voice, "Master Zhan, the grand elders and the Prime Master knew you are back. They have been waiting for you and Brother Chongxiao in the main hall."

Zhan Yunfei sighed and looked at Ye Xiao. He thought, [I guess I am not going to have this man as my personal disciple. They truly are not going to leave me any chance...]

[This is too obvious. The old wounded folks stopped hiding for secret cultivation anymore. They are waiting for the young man to arrive. Look at this, I am never going to win this competition.]

He was upset about it, so he said, "Do you think I am stupid that I need you to tell me what to do?"

That middle-aged man was surprised and stunned. He didn't know what to say next at all. [Should I just shut up?]

[Did he eat gunpowder or what?]

[I am just telling him what happened. Why did he have to scold

me like this?]

However, he said, "No. I am sorry. Please, Master Zhan."

Zhan Yunfei rolled up his eyes and fiercely said, "Why do you have to say that nonsense. Do you think I will just stand here if you don't tell me to get in? You better do more than you talk!"

...

Chapter 806: Never Offend Me!

That middle-aged man didn't dare to say more.

"Mufei! Come with me."

"The others wait here."

Zhan Yunfei walked to the main hall with a dark face. Xiao Mufei followed.

After a while, that middle-aged man came out and spoke loudly, "Who is Ye Chongxiao?"

Ye Xiao stepped forward and said, "I am."

The middle-aged man looked at him. He seemed unhappy. He said, "You should answer 'Yes, master'!"

He must be really pissed by Zhan Yunfei back in the main hall, so he vented his grudge on Ye Xiao now.

Ye Xiao was shocked. "Well... I actually haven't joined the sect officially yet. I don't think it is appropriate to answer as a disciple!"

The middle-aged man was angry. "How dare you! You little bastard! You will suffer in the days to come! I promise!"

Ye Xiao felt wronged. He said, "I didn't do anything. I am just telling the truth..."

The man angrily said, "You are talking nonsense! What are you waiting for? Just come with me!"

Ye Xiao stayed calm and then answered in a cold voice, "I was going to follow you, but I am not now. Look at your face. I won't follow you in there."

The man was pissed. "What did you say? Do you dare not to come with me? Do you know the elders and the prime master are waiting for you now. How bodacious! You should be punished!"

Ye Xiao turned away and prepared to leave. "I think bodacious

people like me is unqualified to be a disciple here. I am weak and lacking talent, and I misbehave. I will leave this place and join a small sect. It is satisfying enough to just have a place to spend the rest of my life."

Ye Xiao could never be wronged. [I am such a talented man now. People in your sect begged me to join them. Now you actually dare to mess with me...]

[I will never let you go easy with this.]

The middle-aged man was so angry that he didn't know what to say next.

He hurriedly tried to grab Ye Xiao's arm. People in the main hall were all waiting for Ye Chongxiao after all. He couldn't let the young man leave now!

At the moment, somebody in the hall shouted in fury, "Wang Yushu! What are you doing?"

It was severe.

It was Zhan Yunfei.

People in the main hall now were all leaders in Cold Moon Palace. The weakest of them was level seven of Dao Origin Stage. They all knew what was going on outside.

Ye Chongxiao was a talented disciple that they all wanted to recruit. He was the future of Cold Moon Palace. Zhan Yunfei and Xiao Mufei told them everything about Ye Chongxiao and they all believed he was the one they wanted.

Ye Chongxiao was not only talented, he also ate the inner core of Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. That meant he had ten thousand cultivation inside him. Besides, he was good at dan-making. His experience, personality, and views were all outstanding. Xiao Mufei was attacked and the girl who attacked them told something about a secret organization. Ye Chongxiao was so smart that he figured out many things about that organization!

How could Cold Moon Palace give up the chance to recruit such a brilliant disciple?

Wang Yushu was so stupid that he actually made trouble against Ye Chongxiao. Now Ye Chongxiao was leaving for other sects. The leaders were anxious!

They didn't want him to leave this sect. They didn't want him to hate this sect. They wanted him to love this sect. Zhan Yunfei wanted it the most!

The next moment, Zhan Yunfei flew out the main hall and slapped on Wang Yushu. Wang Yushu was slapped out dozens of meters away. His eyes, nose, ears, and mouth were all bleeding. That slapping attack wounded the inside of him. Zhan Yunfei didn't want to kill his own man, so he didn't do it in full power. Otherwise, Wang Yushu should be dead!

Zhan Yunfei fiercely said, "Bastard! Who do you think you are! You are nothing! All we want you to do is to watch the gate for the sect. Where the hell did you get that stupid pride from? You want to bully your brothers? You want to tease our people? I am going to beat you to death!"

He rushed over and kicked him hard.

Wang Yushu was kicked and flew up dozens of meters high. Zhan Yunfei jumped up and punched him fast in the air. He was cursing, "Bastard! Bastard! Bastard!..."

As he was shouting, he had punched seventeen times and kicked sixty times on Wang Yushu.

Surely, he didn't really try to do it seriously. Wang Yushu looked beaten up so hard but it was the first slapping attack which hurt him worst. If Zhan Yunfei truly punched him seriously, he should have died long ago...

Zhan Yunfei was totally pissed.

He had been planning such a long time to recruit such a brilliant

disciple. Now that he finally brought the young man back to the sect, he himself couldn't take him as his personal disciple. That made him feel rather angry already.

Wang Yushu actually messed with the young man and nearly made the young man leave...

Zhan Yunfei was furious.

He absolutely wouldn't endure the anger this time!

"Stop!" Suddenly, a white-bearded old man showed up and shouted. He grabbed Wang Yushu and held him in arm. He looked at Wang Yushu and found him bleeding. Wang Yushu passed out, with a head swollen almost twice its original size. That was uglier than a pig head. The old man was angry. "Zhan Yunfei, how vicious! How dare you do this to my grandson."

Zhan Yunfei stood straight up and shouted, "I did! So what! What are you going to do? Say one more word and I will beat you too! I dare you!"

The old man was shaking because of anger. "You... Can't you be reasonable?"

Zhan Yunfei sneered, "Old bastard! Who would kindly be reasonable to you in this world?"

He didn't want to be reasonable. He could accuse Wang Yushu for wasting all the leaders' time in the main hall by messing with the talented disciple Ye Chongxiao. That would ruin Wang Yushu. However, Zhan Yunfei didn't want to say it.

He just beat him.

[I will beat you no matter it is reasonable or not. So what? What can you do?]

The white-bearded old man was so angry that he nearly passed out. He was shaking because of anger, yet he didn't dare to step any further.

The old man came to the sect earlier than Zhan Yunfei. However, he was weaker in cultivation than Zhan Yunfei. Zhan Yunfei was obviously being rude and unreasonable to him, but he could do nothing to respond.

"Are you done with the stupid game? Bring him in. What are you waiting for?" An august voice sounded from inside the main hall.

"Young man, come with me! Let's get in! We don't have to talk to fools. That lowers our standings!" Zhan Yunfei beckoned Ye Xiao. He looked so gentle and friendly all of a sudden. As he walked over that old man, he was murmuring, "Old bastard! Young bastard! ... Two perfect bastards!"

"You!" The old man nearly spat out a full mouth of blood. "Zhan Yunfei, this is not done yet!"

Zhan Yunfei ignored him as if nobody said anything. He just strutted and led Ye Xiao into the main hall.

...

Chapter 807: Moonlight Trial!

Zhan Yunfei and that old man disliked each other for thousands of years. They were brother disciples in the sect. They had been fighting each other since they were kids. None of them got killed. Zhan Yunfei didn't care about it. They had said thousand times worse words to each other before. He was used to it.

Ye Xiao followed Zhan Yunfei to the main hall. In the spacious hall, there were twenty chairs on both sides, left and right.

Up on the stairs, there was a big chair that was made of Purple Crystal Jade. Light went into the chair and it reflected back thousands of glows. A man was sitting on that chair. The chair made him look like a god, sitting in the clouds.

The man looked about forty years old. Three long strands of beard floated in front of his chest. He looked slim. His eyes were crystal and sharp. His staring seemed so shockingly powerful.

At the moment, he was staring at Ye Xiao.

He was exactly the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace, a well-known superior cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm, Bright Sky Moon, Yue Changtian.

There were nine other men sitting on nine chairs which were closest to the Prime Master. They were all looking at Ye Xiao right now.

They were the nine grand elders in Cold Moon Palace.

Ye Xiao knew very well about these men, well, at least the six of them. Those six had joined the fight against him in his previous life. The six of them all showed a pale face at the moment. Apparently, they hadn't fully recovered from that fight yet.

The terrifying Xiao Monarch truly had caused a huge damage to these people.

On nine of the ten chairs that were further from the Prime Master, there sat nine people. They were the ten grand disciples of Cold Moon Palace! The ten grand disciples were the most powerful and influential disciples in the first generation.

Zhan Yunfei was the fourth.

He was wearing white. He looked calm. He was carefully clearing up his clothes at the moment.

Ten seats, but there were only nine of them. The outermost seat was empty. Apparently, it belonged to that white-bearded old man. The elder brother disciple of Zhan Yunfei, who got out to stop Zhan Yunfei earlier. He was Wang Yushu's grandfather.

He must have gone to cure his grandson at the moment.

Nineteen men were sitting in the hall. Thirty-six eyes were looking at Ye Xiao at the same time.

Wait? Nineteen men should have thirty-eight eyes...

Oh. Zhan Yunfei didn't look at Ye Xiao. Zhan Yunfei was sure that as long as this young man showed his talent and potential to these men, he wouldn't have the chance to have Ye Xiao as his personal disciple!

He knew he wouldn't stand a chance, so he decided not to waste the time.

"Are you Ye Chongxiao?" Yue Changtian asked.

His voice was gentle, but also solemn and powerful.

"Yes."

This Prime Master Yue didn't join that fight against Xiao Monarch in the previous life.

It was Ye Xiao's first time to see this man, the Prime Master of one of the three factions.

"He ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish? How

lucky!" An old man opened his eyes wide.

"No wonder we don't see anything special on him." An old man nodded.

"We can't all go over and touch him, can we..." Another old man frowned.

Ye Xiao trembled. [All come over to touch me? A bunch of old guys touch me?]

[My heavens!]

[That is killing me!]

[I will kill myself!]

Yue Changtian sat in the main chair, watching the old men. He frowned and said, "Elders, be patient. Ye Chongxiao came to this world not long ago. He has such a great fortune. He is such a blessed man. I would love to do a Moonlight Trial on him, so as to see his talent and potential. What do you think?"

The old men all answered with a yes.

Yue Changtian looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Ye Chongxiao, take seven steps ahead."

Ye Xiao heard him. He didn't think it mattered, so he took seven steps toward Yue Changtian. When he just took the last step, he felt the world was spinning. Things changed in his sight all of a sudden.

The roof of the hall turned into a night sky full of stars. Everything else disappeared. What he could see was the sky full of stars and a bright moon in the sky.

A beam of moonlight shined upon him. The glow covered his entire body.

Ye Xiao's clothes, muscles and bones were all disappearing.

Only his Jing and Mai could be seen. So many purple lines were

interweaving.

The next moment, one after another beam of star light shined on him rapidly. The star glow was rolling inside Ye Xiao's body.

The others didn't look surprised. They must have gotten used to this. What they did was to watch Ye Xiao with their wide opened eyes.

At the moment, suddenly, there was the sound of the clothes flicking the air. Three figures flew into the main hall and saw what was happening.

"Masters... Grandmasters..." The others all bowed to the three men who just entered. However, they didn't stop watching Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai.

The three old men, who all had white beard, waved their hands and didn't say anything. They were all looking at the Moonlight Trial.

At the moment, something strange showed up beside that beam of moonlight. It looked like a tower, however, it was only the lowest floor of a tower.

An old man murmured, "The tower of talent has shown the groundwork. This man is qualified to cultivate. Every cultivator should have such a potential. It is normal."

Tower of talent. Moonlight Trial.

It was the ultimate potential measuring method of Cold Moon Palace. Only those who were recognized as 'talented' could have the chance to be tested by Moonlight Trial and the tower of talent!

A talented man would be improved in cultivation after getting through the Moonlight Trial!

Only the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace could activate the Moonlight Trial. To activate the Moonlight Trial would consume a lot of the moonlight energy that was stored in the sect. It took Cold

Moon Palace three years to store enough energy for a Moonlight Trial.

That was why they wouldn't easily use this method to test a disciple's potential!

Ye Xiao luckily ate the inner core of a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. Was he just a lucky man, or was he truly a talented cultivator like Zhan Yunfei said?

The answer would be revealed after the Moonlight Trial was done!

The moonlight was getting brighter and brighter. The hall was completely lit up.

There were more and more star lights crossing over each other...

Finally, a beam of moonlight shined through Ye Xiao's feet.

...

Chapter 808: Floor After Floor...

The moonlight shined through Ye Xiao's feet and got into the groundwork of the tower.

Ye Xiao's feet and shoes showed up after the light. It was still weird. After all, Ye Xiao was now a man who only had the feet and the shoes while the rest of his body was just the net of purple lines. That was spooky.

The tower of talent suddenly rushed up as Ye Xiao's feet showed up. On the groundwork of the tower, the first floor of the tower showed up.

"Hmm. The young man has higher potential than normal cultivators indeed..." An old man clicked on the tongue.

Before he finished talking, another beam of moonlight shot out and got through Ye Xiao's knees.

Ye Xiao's knees showed up, along with the clothes.

The tower of talent rose up one floor again.

"Hmm. That is slightly above the average. Well done." Another old man blinked. He was looking at the moonlight with expectation.

Another bright beam of moonlight suddenly shot out and got through Ye Xiao's dantian. It entered the tower too.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

The tower suddenly rose up hugely. It was like bamboo shooting after a spring rain. - Shoot! Shoot! Shoot! - It was growing higher and higher...

The others were all shocked!

[What the hell? Is this normal?]

[Three floors are added just because the moonlight scanned his

dantian?]

[Is... Is he a monster?]

"Natural Body!" An old man kept rubbing his beard and said, "Talented! Brilliant condition!"

Zhan Yunfei was upset. He looked at the tower and showed indifference. [Wait and see. You will all be stunned, old bastards. I am not going to tell you in advance...]

After that, another beam of moonlight got through the upper part of Ye Xiao's dantian.

- Shoot! -

One more floor was added on the tower.

Nobody talked. Everybody was just staring at it. The moonlight was getting brighter. Apparently... it wasn't done yet.

The tower had six floors now.

This meant Ye Chongxiao at least had a Natural Body! That was already brilliant!

However, it didn't finish yet.

Another beam of moonlight shot over Ye Xiao through his chest. The lower part of his body had shown up already, including the clothes.

However, as the moonlight shot through him, it didn't enter the tower immediately. It flew around and got into Ye Xiao's chest again from the other side.

After this, it entered the tower. - Shoot! -

The tower actually just lit up for a second and then nothing changed. It didn't grow.

"What happened?" The old men were surprised.

They hadn't seen this happen in a Moonlight Trial before.

The moonlight did get through Ye Xiao's body, yet the tower didn't change a bit. [Is it over? This young man is no better than this? How come... he activated the moonlight, yet couldn't get himself improved?]

[It should be reasonable, but why is the moonlight getting brighter? If it is going to end here, the moonlight should be fading away.]

They were all confused... Suddenly, the tower moved. -Shoot, shoot, shoot... - Three sounds, three more floors were added!

Nine floors!

[Oh heavens!]

[Oh our beloved heavens!]

[What the hell is this?]

"What the hell!" A white-bearded old man grabbed his own beard and shouted.

The other old men all opened their eyes wide, staring at Ye Xiao.

Their eyes were shining with greediness.

Before this, from the first day Cold Moon Palace was built, the most talented disciple only got eight floors of that tower!

That person was recognized as a monster-like talented man!

However, Ye Chongxiao... he actually reached nine floors!

And this was not the end yet.

The crowd burst in disturbance.

"There's nothing to say. There is nothing more to watch. I am going have this man!"

An old man shouted with his eyes wide opened. "Who dares to snatch him will be my enemy forever!"

The other old men were all thrilled.

"Mine!"

"I want him!"

"He is mine!"

As they were making a racket, the three old men who came to the main hall shouted in anger, "Shut the fxck up, all of you! You? You useless trashes? You want to have such a brilliant disciple? What are you looking at? I am talking to you. Look at you? You want to fight your own brothers in the sect? Grow up! You should go cultivate yourself for more decades before you dare to have your own disciple!"

The old men all lowered their heads. They were upset.

The three old men looked at each other and humphed, then they watched Ye Xiao again.

Another beam of moonlight shot out.

"There is more!" The crowd burst in exclamation.

When they saw the moonlight was bright and shiny, they knew it wasn't done yet. However, the tower had reached nine floors. That was already record-breaking. However, it was easy for them to accept it.

Now that the tower was going to reach higher, they couldn't understand it now!

The moonlight shined through Ye Xiao's neck and got into the tower. As expected, the tower grew up one more floor.

It was ten now!

They were all speechless. It was beyond their recognition now!

[Ten floors! It should stop now!]

However, the moonlight didn't stop.

The moonlight was dazzling. They couldn't even open their eyes. However, they tried hard to watch it. They wouldn't want to miss

any part of this. They knew it was going to the end now.

Finally, in the Moonlight Trial, three beams of moonlight flew out!

They all flew into Ye Xiao's head at the same time!

"Three! There are three! How come?" An old man exclaimed as if he saw a ghost.

Yue Changtian had been trying to keep calm, rubbing his beard and smiling. However, at this moment, he couldn't stay calm anymore. He was so shocked that he accidentally grabbed off one strand of his beard!

The three beams of moonlight got into Ye Xiao's head. The others were all shocked. - Shoot, shoot, shoot! - The moonlight was rolling inside his head and then got into the tower.

- Shoot! -

Elven floors now!

- Shoot! -

Twelve!

- Shoot! -

Thirteen!

- Shoot! -

Fourteen!

- Shoot, shoot, shoot! -

...

Chapter 809: Nature's Perfection; Nine Exquisite Body!

They were all astonished. They were all opening their mouths like dying catfish in the drying pond. It felt like there were many jaws falling to the floor...

Zhan Yunfei had known Ye Xiao had a Nine Exquisite Body, yet he was also astonished! He was totally shocked!

If not for the eye frames, their eyeballs must have shot out already.

At least forty eyeballs would pop out. There were more than twenty people in the main hall after all!

Fifteen floors...

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

...

Eighteen floors!

The tower of talent finally showed the spire.

The spire was shining moonlight, lighting up every corner in the hall!

For the first time, the tower of talent showed its spire! Ye Chongxiao reached the top of the human quality limitation!

The Moonlight Trial was fading away now. Moonlight and star light were all disappearing.

The tower of talent was still slowly spinning in the air. Suddenly, from the spire, a beam of bright light shot toward a piece of paper in front of Yue Changtian.

There showed up a few words on that paper.

The next moment, the tower of talent suddenly exploded into

countless glistens, and then ran into Ye Xiao's body like rivers running to the sea.

It entered Ye Xiao's dantian!

Ye Xiao's body suddenly became transparent for a moment but returned to normal immediately!

- Boom! -

Something made the men feel strange.

They were shocked again.

They stared at Ye Xiao, as if he was a monster.

[He is a monster! He is a monster who goes against the nature's will!]

[He... He just took a Moonlight Trial! He didn't even operate any martial art! The lights entered his body and then... he just got a breakthrough!]

What they felt was familiar to them all. It was the breath of breakthrough!

Ye Xiao actually broke through a new level at such circumstances!

They knew Ye Xiao could never operate any martial art while he was in the trial. His spiritual power would be sealed in the trial. That meant... the energy from the tower that was left by the Moonlight Trial actually led Ye Xiao to a new level!

[What about the cultivation? What about the experience? What about his mind status?]

[Are these all unimportant now? He doesn't need to care about these things now?]

[Ye Xiao is totally the first person in history who actually did this!]

[Really? Is he really this lucky? Is he the Chosen One?]

The three great grandmasters in the sect noticed that their Prime Master was slightly shaking. He couldn't even hold himself now. What made him tremble was the paper in his hand.

The Prime Master didn't say anything, but he looked stunned. He couldn't believe it.

The three great grandmasters stepped over to him.

"How is it? What did the God of Moon say about him?" the three old men asked.

Apparently, even the three great grandmasters in the sect couldn't tell how talented Ye Xiao was now.

Yue Changtian didn't say anything yet, but one of the three old men had grabbed the paper from his hand.

The other two got over to him and looked at the paper.

There were a few words that were written by moonlight. They were slowly fading away but could still be recognized.

The three old men were stunned too!

"Nature's Perfection; Nine Exquisite Body!"

As they saw the paper, the letters finally faded.

However, the words had gotten deep into the three old men's hearts already!

The three great grandmasters were all stunned!

People in Qing-Yun Realm all recognized Natural Exquisite Body was the best physique!

Even Cold Moon Palace, such a great sect in this realm, had never recruited any men who had the Natural Exquisite Body in the tens of thousands years of its existence!

As it was said, Nine Exquisite Body was even better than Natural Exquisite Body.

However, it only existed in myth. Nobody ever saw one...

Somebody said that Nine Exquisite Body was just a lie. They believed Natural Exquisite Body was the best a human could have! After all, there were over a hundred thousand years in history!

Nobody had ever seen a Nine Exquisite Body!

They believed there was no such thing!

However, now these men saw it.

Ye Xiao's body must be even better than Nine Exquisite Body. It said nature's perfection too!

That must be something nobody had heard before! Not even in myth!

Nine Exquisite Body was a myth indeed. Nobody had seen it ever. However, nature's perfection made it a totally different Nine Exquisite Body!

Yue Changtian and the three great grandmasters stared at Ye Xiao. Greedy green lights filled their eyes.

Bodacious as Ye Xiao, he felt scared by that frankly greedy eyes.

During the Moonlight Trial, the only thing he remembered was that he saw a bright light. He totally didn't know what really happened during that time. He was confused at the moment.

He had just returned to himself, and he saw four pairs of greedy eyes staring at him, like dogs who saw bones. They would have swallowed him alive if they could!

Calm as Ye Xiao, he was still scared.

Yue Changtian hurriedly talked firstly. "Masters, it has been a long time that I need a prime master's disciple. It concerns the inheritance of our sect's Prime Master. Masters, please..."

"Fxxk off!" The three old men was being rude.

They all wanted a perfect disciple for themselves. They didn't really care about Prime Master or others. Prime Master's words

meant nothing to them at the moment.

Yue Changtian was no longer calm and peaceful now. He turned his head and thought sadly. [Damn it. I am the Prime Master here, am I not? They actually told me to fxck off in front all these people...]

"I don't care! He's mine! Mine!"

The three old men shouted.

They shouted at the same time, and then started to look at each other with anger in the eyes. Three masses of fierce murderous qi rushed up to the sky.

"You two should better back off. You are both weaker than me, younger than me. I am the eldest here. Why do you think you can get in advance of me? Behave! Show respect to me! Don't disgrace yourselves!"

An old man spoke fiercely, breathing heavily.

...

Chapter 810: Heaven's Selection!

"That isn't right. You are the eldest disciple brother indeed. You are also the strongest in cultivation, but it doesn't mean you are good at guiding disciples..." Another old man was unsatisfied. "And... you already have several disciples. They are all good! Why do you have to snatch..."

"Did you hear your words! What did you say? That's the best you can think of now, right? Wait a minute. What you said proves that I am good at guiding disciples. My disciples are all good! Why can't I have this one?"

The eldest great grandmaster was angry. "Look at you two. You can't even talk well, and you want to have your own disciples? What you do is only misleading the young generation. This young man is such a beautiful treasure. I'm stopping your stupid plan now. He is mine! Alone!"

"You..." The other two old men were pissed. "How dare you! You fxxking said we mislead the young generation? How dare you! I am going to kill you!"

The three old men nearly started a fight.

In the hall, the other nineteen people including the Prime Master were quiet.

The three old men were the eldest among them all. They were the only living great grandmasters in Cold Moon Palace. At least eight of the nineteen people were the three old men's disciples...

Who dared to fight them?

Who dared to fight their own masters for a disciple?

Whoever dared to do that would definitely get themselves killed...

What they could do was to look at each other and stay calm.

Nobody dared to say anything.

[Let the three old men fight. I am never going to have this disciple after all.]

Ye Xiao was shocked. He looked at the three old men. [What the hell are these people. Why can't they just say something nice. I am a treasure? I am his? I am a thing? What the hell?]

[No matter what, these three old guys are all in level nine of Dao Origin Stage. They are all just half a step away from Human Realm Above Heavens!]

[It turns out Cold Moon Palace has such a great force!]

[Not to mention now, even in my previous life, I have no chance to defeat any one of these three old men. I would get smashed. What I could do was to fight for a chance to kill myself.]

[Luckily, these three didn't participate in the fight against me. Otherwise, I would have been slaughtered in a nasty way!]

Ye Xiao felt lucky about it and started to tease himself at the same time. [Not lucky enough. I was killed after all. Even if these three joined the fight, so what?]

[Hmmm... It is said three grandmasters got seriously injured by Xuan Bing. So is it these three old men?]

[Maybe.]

[Wait! These three are terribly powerful. They fought together against Xuan Bing, yet Xuan Bing defeated them all! That is terrifying!] Ye Xiao got to know the three great grandmasters were all true powerful figures. How powerful should Xuan Bing be if she could defeat the three old men at the same time?

[It can't be these three...]

He couldn't think deeper anymore! It made him feel headache!

[It turns out I was just slightly better than average in my previous life. There are so many people who were stronger than me!]

"Well, three masters..." Yue Changtian called up his courage and said, "Well... Ye Chongxiao didn't do the Heaven's Selection yet... It isn't sure yet what martial art he should cultivate. That means... we don't know who he should learn from yet..."

The old men shook their heads at the same time. "No worries. He doesn't need that. With his marvelous talent, he fits every martial art. There is only martial art that he doesn't want to cultivate. There is no martial art that he can't cultivate!"

Yue Changtian's face twisted. "Even so... Heaven's Selection is a requirement from ancient times!"

The three old men were shocked. They thought for a while and stomped their feet hard. "You are right. We can't violate the order of our ancestors. Fine! Do it!"

The youngest old man humphed and said, "But, after the selection, when the result comes out, everybody should obey! Stop making troubles!"

The other two sneered and said, "Pah! You talk like you are going to win for sure. Your Sacred Glow of the Moon is way weaker than my Art of Moon Essence! You think you will win? Daydream! Remember what you just said! Don't question the result!"

"Talk about boasting! Your Art of Moon Essence is normal. My Cold Moon Sky is the best!" The eldest was gloating, like Ye Chongxiao was meant to be his disciple. "Remember, both of you, nobody violates the result. Listen, you two should just go have some rests."

While the three old men were having a 'harmonious' conversation, everybody was walking out the main hall.

They walked through the back of the main hall. After walking for over a dozen miles, they arrived at another hall that was in elliptic shape.

In the hall, there were nothing but only twelve pillars. It felt so

stately and solemn. It must be an important place.

Up below the roof were twelve moons.

They pointed an area in the hall. It was the center of the hall. Ye Xiao walked over and stood there. He was going to experience Heaven's Selection here.

[No wonder the three factions can last tens of thousand years. They have unique cultures...] Ye Xiao praised in mind. [The other sects all let the masters choose a martial art for their own disciples. In the three factions, they let the martial arts choose the disciple. They will let the disciple cultivate the most suited martial art. No wonder they can raise so many influential figures.]

He praised in mind, but he didn't notice there was starlight and moonlight appearing up in the air.

The Heaven's Selection was starting.

Everybody was watching the twelve pillars.

Twelve pillars represented the twelve great martial arts in Cold Moon Palace!

Each pillar had a one hundred degrees scale. As long as the moonlight shined on the disciple, it would light up one pillar. The scale would show how much this disciple fit the martial art. Nobody could fake this.

...

Chapter 811: Gods Envy The Elite?

Those who reached forty were qualified enough to start cultivation in the sect. Sixty meant regular. Cultivator in sixty could never get great achievements but just small success. Seventy meant the cultivator would have the opportunity to get great achievements. Above eighty was brilliant. Cultivators above eighty could surely do great in the martial art, and also had the chance to push the limitation of the martial art. Whoever got above eighty would definitely become elders in the sect.

Those who were above ninety were completely suitable for that martial art. Only those who reached ninety would set up a goal aiming at Human Realm Upon Heavens. There were no more than five hundred people in the entire history who had ever reached ninety. A small part of them died before they reached the highest achievement. Most of them were backbones of the sect.

However, ninety was not the best yet. There were some people who actually reached ninety-five! They were perfect for that martial art. Whoever reached ninety-five would become perfection in the history! There were only seven people in the history who reached ninety-five!

In fact, this 'perfection' actually didn't mean the best. There was one man, only one in the history, who reached ninety-eight! That was better than 'perfection'. He was the 'super perfection'!

Theoretically, if there was people who reached ninety-eight, it should be possible to reach ninety-nine and one hundred. In fact, only those who reached one hundred was perfect!

However, in the history of Cold Moon Palace, there was never anybody who had reached ninety-nine. Not even one.

They all looked at the pillar and then looked at Ye Xiao. Everybody was guessing.

"I guess he would have over ninety," the eldest grandmaster said.

"Ninety is not a problem. I think he will reach ninety-five. I have never been wrong about prejudging a young man!" the second eldest grandmaster said.

"I think he will get ninety-eight." The youngest seemed confident.

"Can you please stop being so tiresome!" the other two said at the same time. "Do you know the great ancestor who built our sect got how much in this? Ninety-eight! For tens of thousands years, only he himself got a ninety-eight! Nobody else got higher than ninety-seven! This man is talented. I agree. But it is impossible to reach ninety-eight!"

The youngest grandmaster was pissed. "I don't think so. He is so talented that he is just like a monster. I think he can reach ninety-eight! Have you two ever seen a man like him before?"

"Look. I know he is unreasonably talented. However, it is impossible that his talent fits the martial art perfectly. He can't be even stronger than our great ancestor..."

The three of them stopped talking at the same time.

Everybody was holding their breath.

The Heaven's Selection began.

Twelve beams of moonlight started to shine on Ye Xiao at the same time.

And then twelve beams of light emitted out from Ye Xiao, shooting over to the pillars!

In the stare of everybody else, the pillars started to shine dazzling lights at the same time!

"This is it! This is going to decide the young man's future!" An elder sighed. He looked nervous. These men weren't the ones taking the Heaven's Selection, but what was happening on Ye Xiao

reminded them the old days when they were being selected.

Everybody looked nervous.

The oldest grandmother sighed. His eyes were moistened. "Every time when I come here... I think of our beloved master..."

The other two grandmaster both had the same feeling. Their eyes were wet and their noses were sour.

"I... I got an eighty-five on Sacred Glow of the Moon. Master was so happy. He told me I would have a great future... He was so happy that he didn't need to be the only person who cultivates this martial art..." The youngest grandmaster sighed. "Oh... Master..."

The oldest grandmaster rubbed the eyes. "Generation after generation... We started in this place... I kept thinking about the old days... When I think of our brothers... I feel grieved. Why can't they just be immortals..."

The three old men were gloomy.

"Holy heavens! They are all lit up!"

Somebody exclaimed. He obviously didn't believe what he saw.

The three old men looked up to the pillars.

They were stunned.

The starlight was so bright in the hall, as if all the starlight in the universe had come to this place at this particular moment!

The moonlight was twice brighter!

The twelve pillars, which represented the twelve martial arts in the sect, were all lighting up!

They were all rising up!

It rose slowly, but it was recognizable. That was so terribly astonishing!

They were all shocked, in a good way!

In the center of the twelve pillars, the young man was shining in starlight and moonlight. His eyes were closed. He just stayed there quietly. However, there were countless splendid lights coming out from his body!

"Forty! He reached forty in all pillars!" Yue Changtian couldn't even blink, "How is this possible..."

"All fit? How come!" Another man was also shocked.

"Totally the same on twelve martial arts..." An elder nodded.

"This is going to be difficult..." Another elder sighed.

They never wanted a disciple to cultivate multiple martial arts, no matter how talented he was. For them, it was not a good thing that a young disciple was suitable for multiple martial arts. To focus on one martial art, the young man would definitely reach a certain level. However, to cultivate different martial arts at the same time, he would never go to the peak of the area.

A person was limited by the physical condition. To cultivate all the twelve martial arts, Ye Chongxiao might become an expert of all different martial arts, but he would never be the best in any of the martial arts.

[Ye Chongxiao is such a talented man, but he is suitable for all the martial arts! Why?]

[It doesn't emphasize particularly on any one martial art!]

[The gods must be envy at him!]

...

Chapter 812: I Hate You!

Even the great ancestor of Cold Moon Palace, who had built this sect, only cultivated three Cold Moon Palace martial arts in his life. The three martial arts were the original martial arts in Cold Moon Palace. The other nine martial arts were created after that by great disciples in the history of Cold Moon Palace!

Tens of thousands years of the Cold Moon Palace history, there were many geniuses who cultivated multiple martial arts. Only a few of them succeeded. The best they did was to reach level nine of Dao Origin Stage. None of them ever reached the top of Dao Origin Stage!

In other words, disciples who cultivate multiple martial arts could never become the main force of the sect!

As they were all pitying it, the degree scales were still rising.

"Sixty now!" Yue Changtian took in a deep breath. He was shocked that the mark was still going up. However, he was disappointed. "All in the same number. Why?"

"If twelve pillars all show seventy at the same time, this young man is done." Yue Changtian seemed sad about it. He had just found a talented disciple for the sect, yet now he was going to see him fall...

The beautiful wish of Cold Moon Palace becoming the most powerful sect in the world broke!

If the twelve pillars all showed seventy, the moonlight would start to weaken. If one pillar went up higher than others at the same time, it might still go up a certain height... Twelve pillars went up at the same time after that?

It was impossible.

Yue Changtian was so nervous. He kept watching the pillars. The light marks on the pillars were still going up slowly. Twelve of

them were rising at the same time!

Seventy!

Yue Changtian closed his eyes. He was hurt.

Seventy was good. It was close to brilliant. For normal disciples, this was a pleasing result. However, for a man who had Nine Exquisite Body, that was simply nothing!

After all, Ye Xiao brought too much hope and expectation to these men. That was why it disappointed them so badly!

[The moonlight is... going to fade away...]

[It's done... We lost it...]

Yue Changtian thought. He was disappointed, in despair even!

He didn't know Ye Xiao so well. He had never spent a long time with this young man. He didn't know this Ye Chongxiao was exactly Xiao Monarch. He didn't know Ye Xiao was a man full of wonders. Anything was possible on him!

While Prime Master Yue didn't want to look at the pillars, people exclaimed.

Yue Changtian could tell that it was the three grandmasters!

[What happened? What's so special that it made the three grandmaster exclaim at the same time?]

[Is it... Do we still have hope on him?]

He opened his eyes. When he just opened the eyes, he was dazzled by the strong light!

[What is it?]

It was simple. The light was so strong that it dazzled the others. They could barely see anything at the moment.

Yue Changtian was still able to handle it though. He forcibly looked at the light and found the thing that emitted the light. It was from the moons below the roof!

He was stunned. [What? The moonlight wasn't fading?]

[It was actually becoming stronger! Dozens times stronger!]

The entire hall was filled with strong moonlight at the moment!

[What is going on?]

Not only Prime Master Yue had the question in mind. Everybody else did!

They all opened their eyes and mouths, staring at the pillars!

They didn't care about the dazzling light anymore!

Yue Changtian looked to the pillars. He suddenly held the breath!

The twelve pillars were showing ninety on the scale at the same time!

The light marks were rising fast!

[Ninety?]

[All twelve pillars?]

[Totally the same?]

[All in one level?]

[No difference!]

Yue Changtian was completely astonished!

Apparently, what was happening was out of his recognition. [What is it? Is this a dream? A bad dream? Or a sweet dream?]

[Isn't it too unbelievable?]

[What exactly is happening?]

He then repeated 'what is happening' three times in a murmur. Not only him, but also all the others were murmuring!

They all stared at the scales on the pillars. They were all still rising...

At the same time, all twelve!

[Am I in a dream? Bad dream or sweet dream, this is too unreasonable...] Yue Changtian pinched his own leg and felt terribly painful. He nearly jumped up and shouted.

When he used one hand to pinch his leg, he saw another three hands pinching on his leg at the same time... That hurt...

He nearly pissed himself because of the pain. He turned over to look aside.

Beside him were the three grandmasters. They were murmuring with confusion, "We are in a dream. We don't feel the pain on the leg..."

Yue Changtian touched his own leg and inhaled. He said, "That was my leg... You pinched the wrong leg... Come on..."

The three old men acted like they didn't hear him. They just kept looking at the pillars and ignored Yue Changtian.

Yue Changtian sighed and then turned over to watch the Heaven's Selection again. He nearly jumped up because of astonishment.

The pillars... showed twelve ninety-five! That was horrible enough to stun everybody in the hall. However, it was not the end. The light marks were slowing down.

However, it didn't stop!

It was still rising!

"Oh my bloody heavens! Ninety-six already!" Zhan Yunfei suddenly shouted so loud. "It is not finished yet... Ahhhh..."

As he shouted, everybody else was scared. They all looked to Zhan Yunfei and showed him furious faces.

Zhan Yunfei's face was ashen. "Xiao Mufei! I hate you! I will hate you for a lifetime!"

...

Chapter 813: What A Monster!

Zhan Yunfei really wanted to cry. "That was such a good chance. You bastard! I missed it because of what you said! I said I wanted him to be my personal disciple... You kept talking about Heaven's Selection and other bullshxts... Look at it! Look at it now! He can cultivate any martial art he wants... Why would I listen to you... Why was I so soft! Damn it! Oh heavens, it reaches ninety-six now... Ninety-seven... What the hell it's ninety-eight now... Xiao Mufei... I helped you get a daughter... And you ruined my great future... I hate you! I hate you now! I will hate you in the future! Next life! I will never stop hating you!"

He was so upset that he couldn't even talk well. He just said whatever was in his mind, trying to vent the grudge out...

However, he didn't notice that the three grandmasters were pissed. They were distant and cold all of a sudden. [What? He nearly got the young man? Xiao Mufei, well done! You have done a great thing for us! We appreciate it!]

Xiao Mufei didn't know anything. He was hated by his savior and also appreciated by the three great grandmasters at the same time!

Everybody was shocked and stunned. The light marks on the pillars had reached ninety-nine and finally stopped.

They exhaled and somebody thought, "Finally... What a monster! Other disciples only want to learn something from us! He is going to end our life this one! That's so scary... It didn't reach one hundred. How lucky! Otherwise, I might die here today...]

However, life never followed one's expectation... Maybe god liked to see somebody be scared to death...

The next moment, after the light marks stopped for a while, the moonlight gathered again. Suddenly, the light marks boosted...

One hundred!

It reached the top of the pillars!

Twelve pillars!

All reached the top!

Whoever saw this were all astonished. They didn't even ask why. What they did was just watching the pillars. They felt blank in the heads. They had a strange feeling that they never had before.

"Is it real? Is this true?" somebody murmured.

After that, many people started to ask the same question. "Is this real? Is this possible?"

"Is it true?"

"How..."

"Am I in a dream... Hey, you, come pinch my arm... Ah!... Damn it! That hurts! This is real... Are you going to kill me... It hurt like hell..."

"You told me to pinch you... didn't you? Besides, so what? Even if I kill you, you will be a dead man and you won't fight against me for this perfect disciple!"

"That's right! Then why should I let you kill me? Why don't I just kill you? I should just kill you so that you don't have the chance to mislead the young generation. I don't think I should let this perfect disciple be under your stupid instruction..."

Yue Changtian was the only person who didn't say anything among them all. He was also astonished, but he just stood there without doing anything. He just kept staring at the moonlight.

It seemed the miracle hadn't ended yet. The light mark of the scale on the pillars had reached the top!

However, the moonlight didn't stop shining!

It was still glowing!

It was still pouring light into the pillars!

What was it?

What did that mean?

It meant... the top of the scale on the pillars couldn't describe this young man's potential! In other words, the twelve pillars in Cold Moon Palace couldn't conclude the potential of this young man!

It didn't end!

What did that mean then?

Yue Changtian trembled. He then started to stare at the young man.

He couldn't move his focus away, as if he was looking at his beloved girl.

The moonlight was still pouring in.

The pillars kept shining...

It lasted about one hour before the moonlight started to fade away.

After a while, the pillars were darkening slowly from top to bottom.

They were shocked again. They had never seen this happen before. The pillars should be darkened instantly right after the selection was done!

How come the pillars were darkening so slowly?

However, they had shouted out 'what is going on' so many times, so they didn't make a sound this time. Even till the pillars all returned to dark and the moonlight and starlight were gone, the hall was still silent.

Everybody was staring at Ye Xiao with great fever in their eyes.

Zhan Yunfei seemed upset.

[All reached one hundred!]

Zhan Yunfei was so regretful that he wanted to smash his own head.

[One hundred in any martial art... He can cultivate any martial art... Heaven's Selection my ass...]

[Xiao Mufei... You bastard... I hate you... I hate you forever!]

If Xiao Mufei was there beside Zhan Yunfei, Zhan Yunfei might swallow him alive!

The three great grandmasters' eyes were just bright like searchlights!

Why would people cultivate martial art?

Of course, they wanted to be invincible! They wanted to prevent being bullied!

However, what did they need once they were old and knew they wouldn't make any progress further?

They surely wanted somebody to inherit them!

A man lived hard only to get himself a great fame no matter when he was alive or after he died!

If one was powerful and famous alive, yet his disciple was such a garbage after he died, he would jump out from his tomb and stamp on the floor!

However, what if his disciple turned out to be a super genius that was able to defeat anybody in the world?

Two different possibilities.

Everybody in Cold Moon Palace was thinking about Ye Chongxiao at the moment.

If he became a legend in the Qing-Yun Realm, even a myth, more powerful than Wu Fa, when people talked about him, they would say... 'Ye Chongxiao, he is from Cold Moon Palace...'

Then Cold Moon Palace got what they wanted.

What came next must be... 'The great Ye Chongxiao's personal master is...'

Thinking about this, the three old great grandmasters were so thrilled that they started to shake!

...

Chapter 814: Wind, Cloud, Thunder and Lightning

Before the selection, these men already wanted to have Ye Chongxiao as their personal disciple. They would rather fight against others to have him. After the selection, they were even excited. They would rather risk their own lives for it!

Greed!

Ye Xiao came to himself. As he opened his eyes, he saw over twenty people looking at him with eyes full of fever.

It felt like a bunch of starving wolves staring at a piece of meat!

It also felt like a bunch of men who hadn't had sex for a long time saw a naked beauty!

Ye Xiao felt that if those men crowded over to him, they were going to swallow him alive!

"What's wrong?" Ye Xiao said, "Am I unqualified? Why are you all so angry?"

[Unqualified?]

[Angry?]

Everybody was surprised!

[Why would you think you are unqualified?]

[If you are unqualified... we should all go eat sh*t!]

[And why do you think we are angry? Our eyes might be red, but that is greed!]

"Qualified. You are qualified. You can join our sect now," Yue Changtian spoke. He tried to sound peaceful. He was definitely a good great sect Prime Master in the world. He calmed down and acted solemnly immediately. He was neither humble nor pushy while speaking. What he meant was 'You, Ye Chongxiao, belong to

Cold Moon Palace now!'

Of course, Yue Changtian knew that he wouldn't win the game against the three grandmasters. He had given up on having a new disciple, so he calmed down fast. Besides, although he couldn't be the young man's personal master, he was always his Prime Master in the sect! That was for sure!

[In fact... If the three old men didn't show up, it could be more than just disciple and Prime Master in the sect between me and Ye Chongxiao...] Yue Changtian sighed. He looked at the three grandmasters and twisted his mouth. He thought, [If the three old masters aren't here, whoever else dares to claim the young disciple over me, I will put him in detention for a hundred years!]

"Qualified?" Ye Xiao frowned.

He knew he would pass the trial, and in a shocking way too. The problem here was... [Ok, I am qualified. What? Why don't you do something? Look at your faces... What? It's like I am an enemy to you all?]

[Shouldn't I have a specific martial art and a master and finish this already?]

The ten elders and nine great disciples gradually became blank on the faces.

[I have no chance to get this man anyway, no matter how bad I want him!]

Ye Xiao looked around and finally saw the three great grandmasters who were staring at him.

All of a sudden...

Somebody moved. That white-bearded oldest grandmaster stood in front of Ye Xiao. "Young man, are you Ye... Ye... Ye... Ye?"

Then he looked at Yue Changtian.

He suddenly forgot Ye Chongxiao's name. He wanted to talk to

him first in order to cotton up to him, but he f*cked up. It sounded like he was calling Ye Xiao grandfather [1].

Yue Changtian made a long sigh.

[Great grandmaster, good for you. Why didn't you ask me first if you don't know his name? Look at you. So embarrassing. You just accidentally called that young kid grandfather several times. Well done. You make this Ye Chongxiao an ancestor to us all...]

He had to help the old man anyway. He sighed and said, "Ye Chongxiao!"

"Right! Ye Chongxiao! That's it!" The white-bearded old man slapped on the leg and said, "Good name! You have a wonderful name! Your name and mine, they fit! You and me, we are bound to be disciple and master! We are a perfect pair!"

Everybody turned around and started to shake. They were laughing but tried so hard not to.

[A perfect pair... What the hell are you talking about... Besides, what is your name? Why are you so sure the two names fit?]

"Well, if he said something else, I would be disdainful. However, their names fit. That's true!" The second eldest grandmaster said, "Ye Chongxiao! Lei Dadi! One from the sky while one from the land. Land and sky, are they a perfect pair?" [2]

Ye Xiao was shocked.

Ye Chongxiao!

Lei Dadi!

The leaf in the earth was rushing up to the sky while the lightning in the sky was striking down on the earth... That... was...

Suddenly, Ye Xiao remembered something.

[Lei Dadi!]

[This old man is the famous Lei Dadi!]

[It was said that there was a secret superior cultivator in Cold Moon Palace who is so powerful that he could sweep over the entire world! He is invincible!]

[His name is Lei Dadi, so people called him Lei the Great King [3]!]

[His martial art is so fierce and brutal that he was like a conqueror in the world!]

[Lei the Great King, someone in the legend.]

[Among millions of superior cultivators, who dares to claim to be a great king?]

[Even if there were people who called themselves king, how long have they stayed alive after that?]

[Lei Dadi, Lei the Great King is obviously an exception!]

"Listen, kid. You should come with me, Feng Wuying [4]. You and I, we make a better group. A leaf should go along the wind and the wind blows the leaf to rush up to the sky," the second grandmaster smiled and talked to Ye Xiao.

"That is nonsense. You are being theatrical here. A leaf rushing up to the clouds, it will only obtain true freedom when it is floating along the clouds. I am Yin Piaoliu [5]. You and I, we are meant to be together!" the youngest grandmaster said.

Ye Xiao heard them talking about how good it was to be their disciple. He was amused, but then he suddenly remembered something again.

The three grandmasters' names were wind, cloud, and thunder! They were exactly three of the four Peak Cultivators, 'Wind, Cloud, Thunder and Lightning'!

The Lightning, Dian Changkong, he wasn't here. About two hundred years earlier, he killed a man who was Wu Fa's disciple. Wu Fa hunted him down and killed him in a nasty way!

Wind, Cloud and Thunder wanted to avenge Lightning, so they

fought Wu Fa in a mountain. After that, nobody knew where the three of them had gone.

Many people believed they were dead. Wu Fa was the strongest cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm after all. Wu Fa was still living in this realm, yet the other three hadn't shown up since ever. People reckoned they were all dead. Nobody ever thought that they were exactly in Cold Moon Palace!

...

[1] Ye Ye (爷爷), exactly the sound of grandfather in Chinese.

[2] Ye Chongxiao, Ye means leaf. Chongxiao means rushing up to the clouds.

Lei Dadi, Lei means thunder, Dadi means land/earth.

[3] Dadi (大地) which means earth and Dadi (大帝) which means great king, sound the same in Chinese.

[4] Feng Wuying, Feng means wind, Wuying means traceless.

[5] Yun Piaoliu, Yun means cloud, Piaoliu means float.

Chapter 815: Disciple Brother Ye

Ye Xiao didn't think of it earlier. Just as how it was described said in the world, Wind, Cloud, Thunder and Lightning were four beautiful men. The four of them were all at the level nine of Dao Origin Stage. It had been one hundred years since they were seen as four beautiful men, however, they became old and clumsy with white hairs and beards now...

It was impossible that they would become like this, as they were all powerful cultivators.

That was why Ye Xiao didn't think of Wind, Cloud and Thunder the first moment when he heard their names!

Maybe... Maybe they all got seriously injured by Wu Fa.

That injury was the reason why they grew older so fast!

Otherwise, strong as they were, they should have many years to live in the world. They shouldn't need to worry about having a personal disciple so soon...

Ye Xiao sighed.

The three old men were still quarreling.

None of them really wanted a fight, but none of them would like to give up the chance. They were all so determined.

In the end, Lei Dadi grabbed Yue Changtian on the collar and let him make a decision. He was the Prime Master after all. They wanted him to decide Ye Chongxiao's future as the Prime Master...

The other two old men didn't hesitate. They crowded over and grabbed on Yue Changtian too. One of them grabbed on his chest, while the other grabbed his sleeve. They talked so loud as if they would kill themselves if Yue Changtian didn't assign Ye Chongxiao to them.

Yue Changtian was in such a big trouble all of a sudden.

He surely wouldn't dare to piss any one of the three old men.

The three old men were already furious. It seemed they were ready to have a big fight outside the hall to decide who could have the young disciple today.

"Let's fight! Winner gets to make the call! Winner gets the young man!"

"Let's go! You think I'm be scared?" Lei Dadi held his sleeves and laughed weirdly, "You two have been beaten up by me for your whole lives. Now you ask more!"

"We have been respecting you because you are the oldest! You think you really are that capable?"

"Hah!"

"Come on! Let's see who's a coward!"

"Let's do it!"

The three old men were walking out.

Everybody else was shocked... [Are they really going to fight?]

[No! They can't!]

At this important moment, Yue Changtian thought of something.

"Wait! Grandmasters. I have an idea. You may want to discuss about it!" Yue Chagntian spoke loudly.

"What is it?" Lei Dadi looked back.

That was just a joke. None of them three really wanted that fight. Since they were badly injured in the old days, they had lost their cultivation foundation although they still had the same cultivation. In other words, they were the same powerful in a fight, but they were already at the end of their lives. That was why they looked so old. They felt lucky to be alive everyday.

It didn't mean they couldn't fight. They could. They were still as

powerful as they used to be. However, they didn't use spiritual power to fight anymore. Instead, they used their life energy. More as they used it, more likely they would die immediately.

When Xuan Bing came to Cold Moon Palace and hurt the three elders, the three grandmasters didn't show up to fight against her. In one hand, Xuan Bing was too powerful. The three old men had to fight together so as to have chance to defeat Xuan Bing. In the other hand, the three old men knew that Xuan Bing didn't really want to wipe out Cold Moon Palace, and she was just sending a message. That was why the three of them just kept hiding!

If they really had a fight now, they would have to burn their life energy. If things went worse, the three of them might need no disciples ever. They might just all die there.

"I understand how you feel, grandmasters... But... There is only one disciple." Yue Changtian smiled, "How about... We make Ye Chongxiao a personal disciple to all three of you. What do you think?"

"Good idea, Prime Master! Good!"

"Nice! Not bad!"

"That's right. You are a good Prime Master! What a great idea!"

The three old men all agreed with pleasure!

Yue Changtian was surprised. He suddenly felt like he had eaten a piece of shxt. [The three old guys reacted so quickly. They didn't even hesitate a bit. They must have thought about this earlier. They just felt disgraced to say it, so they let me say it for them...]

[You want this, then why don't you just say it... Why do you have to do this to me...]

[Is this fun?]

After all that had happened, Ye Xiao, Ye Chongxiao, finally and officially became a disciple of Cold Moon Palace!

He had a pretty high seniority even though he was new in the sect. He was a disciple brother to the Prime Master!

Yue Changtian now had a little younger disciple brother, who was apparently the inheritor of the three grandmasters. Ye Xiao was now even more important than all other disciples. [We were only personal disciples to our masters in the old days. He is definitely better than being a personal disciple now.] The nineteen Dao Origin Stage cultivators in the hall all felt weird at the moment. However, they all showed a fake smile and gave Ye Xiao something as gifts to congratulate him.

"Brother Zhan." Ye Xiao was standing before Zhan Yunfei's eyes. He felt so good about it.

[You? You want me to be your disciple? Hah! Now we are the same generation in the sect!]

[Wait! When I officially become the inheritor, I am in higher position than you!]

Zhan Yunfei showed him an ugly face. "Brother Ye."

Ye Xiao took over Zhan Yunfei's present. He showed a pure and friendly big smile.

Zhan Yunfei turned around with a blank face. He didn't turn back...

"How will the three grandmasters train Brother Ye?" Yue Changtian was also feeling sick about this. However, a genius disciple stayed in the sect after all. The sect finally had an opportunity to rise in the future. He felt happy about it.

"Well, that's simple." Lei Dadi rubbed his beard and said, "We will train him for three months first. After three months, according to his cultivation level, we will put him into the ground competition! We must keep the ground competition fair. No matter who he is, he must fight his own way up from the bottom of the league. Who has the bigger fist makes the call!"

"That's right!" Feng Wuying smiled. "Good steel needs a heavy hammer! One will only glow in splendid light after hard training. We will train him step by step and make sure he will improve faster."

"That's right. That's what we should do as his masters. However, the most practical training..." Yun Piaoliu said, "It should be the ground competition of the sect."

"You are right. Masters. But, Brother Ye is weak in cultivation. I am afraid he will get hurt among the disciples. Even though you are going to train him for three months, I don't think he will make any progress!" Yue Changtian was worried. "It is good to make him practice. However, if we push him too hard, won't it be worse for him..."

"Humph! He is our disciple. Even if he will get hurt, so what?" Lei Dadi looked up and spoke arrogantly, "After less than one and half a year, he will be at the peak of Spirit Origin Stage!"

"Heh, heh..."

Yue Changtian obviously didn't believe it!

...

Chapter 816: Genius in Conservation!

A lucky man who had just ascended to the upper realm and ate the inner core of a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish, gets a great luck to get an outstanding cultivation storage and become a personal disciple of the three great cultivators. However, it took time to improve himself in cultivation after all.

It might be possible that he would reach Dao Origin Stage after one or two hundred years!

To reach the peak of Spirit Origin Stage in one and half a year?

That was impossible, no matter how much potential he ha.

"What? You don't believe it?" The three old men frowned and looked at Yue Changtian.

"Yes. Yes, I do believe it. I can't wait to see that day!" Yue Changtian smiled.

No matter what, the three old grandmasters finally had their personal disciple at the last period of their days. They had a peerless genius in the world to be their inheritor. It was such a great thing that would make them laugh all day.

The next moment, the over a dozen men who had left the hall returned.

They looked troubled and solemn.

Lei Dadi was surprised. "What? Are you going to take away our new disciple?"

Zhan Yunfei felt it both funny and annoying. He said, "No... We forgot to discuss about something really important."

When he left the main hall, he suddenly remembered something. They all forgot to discuss about one thing, which was more important than having Ye Chongxiao to be their disciple. They needed to talk about that secret organization...

It concerned everybody's life. It even impacted the future of their sect.

That was why he stopped everybody else to return to the main hall.

"It is not about Chongxiao. Good. Then it isn't anything serious. I will let you guys make the decision." Feng Wuying took a breath out of relief and said, "I must take my disciple with me. It is better to cultivate earlier."

Yun Piaoliu frowned and said, "Right. There is one more thing. Nobody talks about Chongxiao's talent and anything about the heaven's selection. Whoever violates this will get the most severe penalty!"

Yue Chagntian nodded and said, "That's right. Chongxiao is the key to the great future of our sect. Nobody should leak anything! Who violates this will be sentenced with treason to the sect!"

"Hmm. By the way, now Ye Chongxiao is a personal disciple to all the three of you... What should we do? Should we announce it to everybody in the sect?" Yue Changtian said.

"No! We say nothing about Chongxiao!" Yun Piaoliu suddenly raged up. "You think we three old men should waste time to think of such things? What do you think we need a Prime Master for?"

After that, the three of them crowded around Ye Xiao and left the main hall.

Yue Changtian rolled his eyes. He was speechless about it.

[What is that?]

[Are you telling me you do not know what you need me for? Look how you keep getting away from all troubles and leave all the sh*t to me.]

He thought for a while and spoke in a deep voice, "We need to keep it a secret strictly. No one tells anything about Chongxiao

joining the ground competition until the three grandmasters train him for three months. We should tell every disciple that he is a rookie disciple when that day comes. After all, every sect knows he will become our disciple anyway. We can't hide this."

"Three months? Somebody is going to get through three months' of hell." An old man was gloating.

"Sure. Qualified as Ye Chongxiao is, he surely should have the chance to get through the three months in hell." Yue Changtian said, "However, it is still a problem whether he can get over the three months."

Everyday stayed silent. Some of them looked ashamed. They didn't pass the three months trial of hell in the past...

"It is the basis of everything else!" Yue Changtian said, "The three months trial of hell will be the real path to the greatness. Let's just wait and see."

"I hope he can get through it safely." Yue Changtian sounded full of expectation. He spoke word by word, "If Ye Chongxiao can get through the three months trial of hell, maybe our sect..."

When he said so, everybody else was staring at him. It seemed they had thought of something unbelievable.

Yue Changtian took in a long breath and said, "Maybe... There will be a real Saint!"

The others stayed quiet.

Three month trial of hell, only talented disciples had the chance to get through it. However, to pass the trial didn't depend on how talented a disciple was.

Nobody knew whether Ye Chongxiao could pass it.

However, they had high hopes for it, because Ye Chongxiao was more talented than anybody they knew!

"However, what should we tell others about who became his

personal master?" Zhan Yunfei frowned. "If we tell them the three grandmasters are his personal masters, then... it means we tell everybody we have a great talented disciple!"

Everybody else smiled bitterly. "Then the other sects will do whatever they can to destroy Ye Chongxiao. They might even make suicide attacks."

"Even if everybody in Cold Moon Palace would die to protect him, we might fail."

Since they had such an expectation on him, then they would have to do everything to protect him.

"Hmm... Xiao Mufei had a disciple whose name was Fang Dalong, right?" Yue Changtian had an idea. "Fang Dalong is dead now. He died for Chongxiao. Let's tell the public, Chongxiao became Fang Dalong's personal disciple so as to return the favor to Fang Dalong..."

"One more thing... His name..." Another elder said, "The other sects must know about his name."

"That is not the biggest problem. Chongxiao ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. The sects will definitely pay special attention to him. They will try everything to get as much information about Chongxiao. We can't hide everything. We tell everybody he becomes Fang Dalong's disciple. It may show them how Chongxiao values friendship. The sect will definitely see him as a hopeless and soft man. The sects will slightly lose attention on him. After all, a man who is too stubborn won't be a threat to them after all. They know Ye Chongxiao will never be a great cultivator if he follows Fang Dalong's league," Yue Changtian said.

"Besides, it also shows the other sects that he is just a normal person who has a good luck. It will show them that we don't really value him that much... It will reduce their attention on him too."

"Step by step, the problem gets solved."

"Prime Master is wise and smart indeed. We respect you!" A middle-aged man smiled and thumbed up. "No wonder you can become the Prime Master."

Yue Changtian's face turned dark. He shouted angrily, "Nonsense! Get back to the main topic!"

"Yes!"

...

Ye Xiao followed the three grandmasters, moving fast to a big mountain. It was the highest mountain in Cold Moon Palace.

On the mountain, there were three thatched cottages. The three grandmasters lived there.

On top of the entire place, beyond the palace, there were only three thatched cottages!

That was such a special scene!

Ye Xiao was shocked when he saw that.

Who would imagine that the three most powerful men in Cold Moon Palace actually lived in three shabby thatched cottages, in the highest position of the sect!

Looking at Ye Xiao's surprised face, Yun Piaoliu casually asked, "What? Surprised?"

"Yes." Ye Xiao was honest.

He was surprised!

"You are from the lower realm. I thought you should be more experienced and steady than the other young generation. It turns out you just talk like that. You are not experienced. You just looked like so! You are just older!" Lei Dadi said.

...

Chapter 817: Battle in the Old Days

"Hmmm..." Ye Xiao didn't say anything.

After all, nobody knew how experienced and steady Ye Xiao could be. He had died once! How could he not be experienced enough?

"Heh, heh! Don't be unconvinced though. I know you have been through more than others, because you went through so much to ascend to this world. It is your advantage, but it could also be your shortage!"

Ye Xiao was surprised. He said humbly, "I would love to hear more edification!"

"You are from the lower realm. You must feel stressful when you first arrived in here. You felt unacceptably weak. You felt like nothing. Thus, you are self-contemptuous. However, after some days, you convinced yourself that you are weak because you are not a native in this realm. You finally have the excuse to comfort yourself. You know you are more experienced and better trained than most cultivators in this world. It only takes time for you to become one of the best in the world."

"It is a good way to think about the reality you are in. However, you miss one thing. You must see the arrogance in yourself. If the arrogance in you became your impulse, you may have a great achievement in the future. If you can't properly use the arrogance, you will be destroyed by it. What future do you think you have?" Yun Piaoliu said.

Ye Xiao was shocked. He answered, "Humbly, I shall listen to your edification, Master!"

Ye Xiao spoke twice. What he said sounded the same yet totally different! The first time he spoke, he wanted to hear more from the old guys. It seemed respectful, yet he was just acting!

The second time he spoke, what he said was from the bottom of

his heart. He was grateful for the edification for real!

What Yun Piaoliu just said was such an enlightenment to Ye Xiao. The former didn't know the real potential of Ye Xiao, and he also didn't know Ye Xiao had lived two lives. Ye Xiao, on the other hand, knew the truth about himself. He had been the Xiao Monarch in Qing-Yun Realm in the previous life. He was experienced, skilled, wise and calm. It was simple and easy for him to become peerless in the Land of Han-Yang.

However, now as he thought of it, if he didn't get the East-rising Purple Qi, Boundless Space, Brother Egg and other good opportunities by luck, it might take him over fifty years to succeed. However, he had them all, so he ascended to Qing-Yun Realm in only two years!

Since he returned to Qing-Yun Realm, he always knew he should stay low, because he was too weak to show himself in this world. However, deep in his heart, he was still an arrogant man.

The three old guys actually said something that truly enlightened Ye Xiao! It made him think deeper!

"You are a smart man indeed. You understand more than what you are told. Let me tell you one more thing. It's supposed to be a secret though. We may look powerful in front of Yue Changtian, as if we are the ones who are in charge, but in fact, that is so fake. If not for these three thatched cottages, we should have died fifty years ago!" Lei Dadi smiled blandly.

Then he led Ye Xiao into the cottage.

"You two have talked enough to him. Now it's my turn. Chongxiao, my disciple, I am only going to tell you one thing. You must remember it." Feng Wuying spoke solemnly, "A humble house can shelter a person, while a mansion can kill one's ambition!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He stopped walking.

He repeated the word in his head again and again. He actually learned a lot from it!

"We are dead men who crawled out from the cottages. After a few years, we will die in these cottages." Lei Dadi wasn't so overwhelming now. He seemed solitary.

"Three masters, I am still confused." Ye Xiao said, "I roughly understand what you said, but I don't fully understand what you mean just now."

"It won't be good if you understand it right now." Feng Wuying smiled. "We have great expectations on you."

"I shall accept your edification!" Ye Xiao humbly and seriously said.

Ye Xiao said the same word again. However, each time he said it, he had different feelings!

The three old men living in the cottages had moved Ye Xiao. He respected the old men greatly now.

The three old men were all times older than the years Ye Xiao had lived.

"Dian Changkong died in Wu Fa's hands..." Lei Dadi talked about Dian Changkong and there were tears in his eyes. "It was like a lightning striking on our heads. We decided to go out the mountain and fight against Wu Fa. We wanted to avenge our brother!"

Ye Xiao nodded.

He knew that. Thunder, Wind and Cloud gathered together and left the mountain. It shocked the entire martial world. They had written a letter of challenge, which shocked everybody even so many years later.

'There is no right or wrong in the martial world. Only sword decides life or death. Only strength calls justice! One should return

much favor to a little help! One should take revenge to suppress the grudge! Wu Fa, you killed our brother! To us, you have ripped our legs off! An eye for an eye, a life for a life!

'We will never let go of such a grudge! Fifth of September, on the top of Thousands Troop Mountain! We will wait until you show up in the decisive battle!'

'Lei Dadi! Feng Wuying! Yun Piaoliu!'

Three superior cultivators challenged the recognized No. 1 cultivator, Wu Fa!

It was this letter which caused the fight!

A letter of challenge.

They never asked for the reason why Wu Fa killed their brother. They never said anything about who did wrong first.

In their hearts, reasons didn't matter at all.

They only saw what happened. They only saw reality.

Dian Changkong was dead!

Wu Fa killed Dian Changkong. That was the fact.

They would avenge their brother. That was all.

If they died in that fight, Wu Fa was right. If Wu Fa died, they were right. That was it. If they defeated Wu Fa, Dian Changkong was right to kill Wu Fa's disciple!

As simple as that. These are the rules in the martial world!

He who won the war wrote the history. It was the same in the martial world!

The fifth of September, the Thousands Troop Mountain was crowded by countless people who were there to watch the fight.

...

Chapter 818: What I Lack

However, when the four great cultivators showed up together in that mountain, they aroused a huge mass of overwhelming qi. That murderous qi drove away the hundreds of thousand people who were there to watch the fight!

The four of them did nothing. They just showed up there and the overwhelming qi of them were powerful enough to suppress normal people to death!

Whoever stayed would die!

One had to risk one's life to stay there and watch the fight. In fact, even if one was willing to die, he might fail to watch the fight. He might die before the fight even began!

After that fight, many things and many people disappeared!

People and many things.

After that fight, Thousand Troop Mountain was gone!

The entire mountain disappeared because of the fight!

The three superior cultivators of Cold Moon Palace were missing. Wu Fa barely showed himself to the public after that fight!

"That fight, the three of us fought together, yet we still couldn't defeat Wu Fa. He truly is the most powerful figure in the world. However, it was also impossible for him to kill us without getting himself hurt, no matter how powerful he was... At the end of the fight, the three of us were seriously injured, and Wu Fa was wounded too. Things went rough. When we wanted to die along with Wu Fa, he left, leaving one word behind."

"My disciple bullied an innocent woman. He should be killed. He had learned from me since so many years ago, yet he still died in other's hands. He deserved to die! However, he was my disciple after all, so I killed Dian Changkong. That was to take revenge. I

did it for my dozens of years of indoctrination to my disciple."

"You want to kill me because you want to avenge your brother. That is reasonable!"

"You are not capable of killing me, and I will have to get myself seriously wounded if I kill you. This fight won't end in happiness. Since we have our reasons... Why don't we just call it off!"

"Farewell!"

"Then he just left."

"The three of us were all seriously hurt. We returned to the sect to rest immediately. However, it hurt our life essence. We couldn't improve ever since. It was so difficult to get ourselves cured. We have been suppressing the wounds on us, so as to live longer. However, we are stepping closer to death. We can't fully recover anymore. We can just live a few more pathetic days. Look at our faces. That describes many things."

Feng Wuying made a long sigh.

"We three have given up our own dignity to have you become our disciple because we see hope on you. Maybe you, a genius young man, can accomplish our dream... We hope one day you can defeat Wu Fa! That is the only thing we want to do in our lives!" Yun Piaoliu looked sad. He spoke in a low voice word by word.

Defeat Wu Fa!

"Wu Fa, his Spring-mountain Mustard Art is unbelievably powerful. If we didn't experience it, we wouldn't even imagine there is such powerful a martial art in the world..." Lei Dadi took a deep breath. He looked even older when he talked about Wu Fa. The wrinkles on his face seemed deeper.

Ye Xiao noticed Yun Piaoliu told him to defeat Wu Fa, not to kill him.

"Masters, I have a question," Ye Xiao said.

"Go ahead," Yun Piaoliu said.

"I am new to this world, and I have experienced too little. However, I believe all methods in cultivation lead to the same purpose. The top of cultivation level in Qing-Yun Realm should be the top of Dao Origin Stage. When you fought Wu Fa, you should already be at the top of Dao Origin Stage. Wu Fa has always been the most powerful cultivator in this world. No matter how powerful he is, he should be no higher than Dao Origin Stage. The three of you fought against him..."

Ye Xiao said, "Maybe it was about experience and schemes... but in your level, it all depends on strength. He fought against you three at the same time. Experience wouldn't help him that much. For example, when I was in the lower realm. The top of Sky Origin Stage is the highest cultivation level in that world. I was at the highest point of Sky Origin Stage already. I was invincible against a single enemy. However, I would always lose if I face three top-level Sky Origin Stage cultivators at the same time... I am wondering if Dao Origin Stage is a different martial art stage than other stages?"

"Hmm? Who told you... that level nine of Dao Origin Stage is the highest point in Qing-Yun Realm?" Lei Dadi widely opened his eyes.

"What? It is not?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

He was truly surprised this time. He used to be Xiao Monarch, in level nine of Dao Origin Stage. Now, somebody was telling him what he knew was not true!

[That is impossible!]

He knew Xiao Monarch wasn't a match to Wu Fa or Xuan Bing, because his martial art and his martial art foundation were too weak. However, he knew he wasn't weak in wisdom and insights.

The three old men were telling him something that made him confused. He wondered if he had always been wrong about the

cultivation levels in Qing-Yun Realm.

"Yes!" Lei Dadi spoke loud and seriously, "But... No!"

"What you know about the cultivation levels is right. The top of Dao Origin Stage is the highest point of cultivation level in this world. Everybody knows it. However, those who are from the real great sects, those who had existed for tens of thousand years and have reached level eight of Dao Origin Stage, know that the top of Dao Origin Stage is not the limitation in this world!"

"That is why cultivators in sects are so different to those who cultivate on their own," Feng Wuying said.

"The top of Dao Origin Stage is the limitation of cultivation in this world. That can be right because there is no specific levels or stages beyond level nine of Dao Origin Stage."

"However, it doesn't mean there are no higher phases!"

"Higher phases..." Ye Xiao frowned. He was confused.

"Those who cultivate on their own always chase after the number of levels and stages. However, they ignore the real status of themselves. Their cultivation foundation won't be solid due to their low background. That is why great sects are always great sects."

What Feng Wuying said enlightened Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao had been traveling over the world. He was free and rakish, but he always felt that he was lacking something.

It turned out what he lacked was a solid cultivation foundation!

...

Chapter 819: Three Phases!

To acquire a solid foundation, one should go through rough trainings from a young age, not only to push oneself up to certain cultivation levels, but to gradually improve oneself in cultivation foundation step by step... That was something a superior cultivator needed the most!

It was what Ye Xiao lacked the most in his previous life!

In other words... he needed the guidance of a good master!

Other than that... the phases in the highest cultivation level was the secret that was kept by those great sects.

"After Dao Origin Stage, there are roughly three phases. Only by getting through all the three phases after Dao Origin Stage can one become an immortal!" Lei Dadi smiled bitterly. "As long as the last phase was broken through, one will go up to Human Realm Upon Heavens!"

"Tittle Phase; Cage Phase; Tatter Phase. Three great phases!"

"Tittle Phase... Cage Phase... Tatter Phase..." Ye Xiao murmured.

He had never heard of these!

He used to think that he was such an outstanding figure in this world, but it turned out he was one of the ignorant group!

"Tittle Phase is the first phase after level nine of Dao Origin Stage. Think of its name, tittle. It means in this phase, you have to learn how to see things in tittle. For example, when a piece of rock or a knife flies over to you, it only takes less than a second to reach you, yet you still have to see every detail of that rock and that knife. In fact, you will have to do much better than this. In that phase, one second is a long time. You will have to do many things within that one second. For example, within that one second, you will have to see every detail on that rock or that knife and then break it!"

"That is the Tittle Phase. In that phase, you will be able to tear a blade into pieces with one finger, without even using any spiritual qi." Yun Piaoliu said, "Look. I didn't say destroy that blade. I said tear it into pieces! To disassemble it!"

"Disassemble!"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

Destroying sounded even more powerful than disassembling, yet Ye Xiao knew it was far more difficult to disassemble something than to just destroy it!"

"Does it mean... Let's say I am in level nine of Dao Origin Stage and I am fighting a man in the same level, except he is in Tittle Phase. When I attacked him by swaying my sword on him, he can instantly see through every detail on my sword and tear my sword into pieces?"

Ye Xiao took in a cold breath. "So he can break my weapon instantly! That is the Tittle Phase!"

Yun Piaoliu said, "It's good that you understand it this way. That is the Tittle Phase!"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

"Back to that day, the three of us had just entered Tittle Phase. We hadn't spent much time to cultivate deeper yet. What we could do was to break the enemy's weapon. In fact, the true art of Tittle Phase is not just breaking some weapon, but it disassembles everything! It sees through everything, including the air that is pushed by a fist attack!" Lei Dadi said.

"What? Isn't it awesome! If I can reach that height of Tittle Phase, everything in the world will be in my sight! I will be able to conquer every object in the world! What could restrain such power then? Isn't it invincible?" Ye Xiao asked.

"The art of cultivation is unlimited. Where your eyes see is where your mind goes deep. If you think Tittle Phase is invincible, I can

only prove you wrong. It is only the first phase of the three Great Phases! Back to that day, Wu Fa had already broken through the first phase. He had already entered Cage Phase."

"We didn't have a chance to win that fight at all," Lei Dadi spoke bitterly. "We were all at the top level of Dao Origin Stage. However, we were one phase below him. That made it seem like three mortals fighting against a god! He won it all! What we did was to try everything we can to protect the other two. Wu Fa didn't want to get himself hurt. Otherwise, none of us could survive that horrible day."

"No way. You are in the same cultivation level. How is it possible?" Ye Xiao was shocked.

"That's the truth!" Lei Dadi sighed.

"What is that Cage Phase. How is it even more powerful than Tittle Phase, which sees through everything in the world!" Ye Xiao asked.

"Tittle Phase is limited in objects. In Cage Phase, one can control space. Wu Fa was in the initial phase of Cage Phase back then. He can make the space where his enemy stays become like a cage immediately."

"Even when he was fighting Dao Origin Stage cultivators, that space cage will lock the cultivators inside it for a short period of time! They will be jammed and the only thing they can do is to wait for Wu Fa's attack! It lasts for the time of a breath. However, it is long enough for a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, even a Sky Origin Stage Cultivator, to kill the man who is jammed many times! The three of us kept protecting each other in different spaces! We kept staying a certain distance to each other. Otherwise, we might be jammed at the same time and Wu Fa would kill us all easily!"

"This sounds incredible, but it isn't all the Cage Phase's power. Wu Fa was in the initial phase. What he did was just the simplest

of all the Cage Phase allows him. If we are right, the Cage Phase allows the cultivator to control the space to restrain the enemy and also move oneself instantly as they want. Think about it. When you confidently attack him, he will suddenly disappear and then reappear again in another position. What if he make a counterattack from that impossible position?"

"Control space? Move space? Isn't it something only a god can do?"

"Tatter Phase..." Feng Wuying was going to talk about the third phase. Lei Dadi interrupted, "It doesn't help anything to talk about this now. Any disciple should go beyond level eight of Dao Origin Stage before he gets the chance to know things about the three phases. You are violating the rule that is set by our ancestors. Besides, I don't want him to know too much about it. It may cause negative influence on his mindset. It won't be a difficult thing for him to reach level eight of Dao Origin Stage anyway. He has the hidden power from the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish after all. It only takes time for him to have the chance to know more about the true power."

Feng Wuying laughed. "I know. But if we don't tell him now... I'm just afraid that we may die before Chongxiao reaches level eight of Dao Origin Stage."

As he said so, the other two old men sighed at the same time.

It might be a problem for them to live another twenty-five years...

No matter how talented or how good Ye Chongxiao was, he didn't seem to be able to reach Dao Origin Stage in less than two hundred years!

They couldn't make it that long.

"Chongxiao, we are running out of time. The next three months will be extremely tough for you. You must be ready for it." Yun

Piaoliu sounded fierce and vicious. "When I said tough, it means full of dangers. The next three months, you will have no time to rest! You have time to eat and go to toilet, but that is all. You won't even have time to wash your face!"

"What we want is that you can try whatever you can to survive the coming three months!"

"It is... the three months of hell!"

...

Chapter 820: The Path to Become Immortal!

Yun Piaoliu sounded quite solemn.

"So, you should go sleep as much as you can today. Take a good rest. Let's start tomorrow morning!"

...

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He went to a cottage and then lied on a bed in it. He really didn't think of anything else and just fell asleep as soon as he could.

Others might thought the three old men were exaggerating the hardship, however, Ye Xiao knew that the three old men only made it sound easier than it truly was!

What Ye Xiao should do was to grasp every second to rest!

The coming three months, he wouldn't have time to sleep. Sleeping would become a wasteful dream for him!

He had heard about the three months of hell before.

It was a special training method which was only used in the three factions. It was top secret of the sects. They seldom let their disciples enter this training. Even when there were people who got through this training progress, they barely finished it all!

The training method would only be used on the most talented disciples!

However, it was such a cruel and difficult training!

Besides, the chosen disciples would only do this training in the beginning of their cultivation!

In tens of thousand years of history, none of the disciples of the three factions could finish all three months training!

Most of the disciples quit after only three days.

Whoever held on longer than three days would get big

achievements in the future!

All those who held on longer than one month all reached Dao Origin Stage at the end.

Those who got over two months all reached the top of Dao Origin Stage and became elites of their sect!

Those who held on till the last ten days...

No! There had never been anybody who could hold it till the last ten days in the third month.

That was why they called it three months of hell!

Ye Xiao knew that what he was going to learn in the three months was what he lacked the most in his life. He hadn't been aware of its importance in the past. As he grew older and became stronger, he realized how important the cultivation foundation was. However, it was too late.

He now felt really lucky. If he didn't join Cold Moon Palace by chance... he might miss the opportunity to make up for it.

Three months of hell would only be done by people in the three factions! If he wasn't one of Cold Moon Palace's disciples, even though he knew he needed to set a solid foundation for himself, he wouldn't know how to do it.

Besides, he needed a person to host the three months in hell for him!

In fact, the host was the most important part of the three months of hell. The host should be at least level eight of Dao Origin Stage! Those rogue cultivators who were in Spirit Origin Stage, how could they find somebody in Dao Origin Stage help them get through a training like this?

It was impossible.

That was the saddest thing to the rogue cultivators!

It was also the most valuable fortune the disciples in the great

sects could have!

The opportunity only went to the most talented disciples though!
Ye Xiao got the opportunity now. He would definitely cherish it!

...

Ye Xiao was deep in asleep.

The three old grandmasters looked solemn while standing outside.

"Brother, how many days did you reach during your three months of hell?" Yun Piaoliu asked. "I remembered... when I was doing that... I nearly risked my life but was only able to hang on two and a half months at the end."

"I am two months and fourteen days. That is close," Feng Wuying said.

"I am two months and nineteen days. Master was so happy to see me hanging for such a long time. He said I was one of the three disciples in history who held on in the three months of hell for the longest time."

Lei Dadi looked into distance and said, "I miss him so much... I want him to host a three months of hell for me again... I would love to even die in the three months... It must be so good."

The three of them sighed at the same time. Nobody talked about this anymore.

"We didn't tell Chongxiao the importance of the three months of hell." Feng Wuying said, "We want him to get through the three months with a fearless heart of a rookie..."

"That is impossible. He will do no better than we did. However, he is so talented and full of potential. If he can hang on as a long as we did, it should be enough for him to become as powerful as Wu Fa in the future," Yun Piaoliu said.

"You are right. The last half month is truly like the life in hell..."

Lei Dadi said, "Everyday it became twice more difficult than the previous day. Even god couldn't hold on all the three months. Everyday when I was asleep at night, I dreamt about the last four days I spent in the three months of hell. It was such a nightmare."

Yun Piaoliu smiled bitterly. "You two have lasted a few days longer than I did. Master said I would never catch up with you. He was right. I never did! However, I am still confused. Is the three months of hell just something the sect uses to scare their disciples? Our ancestor spent so much to get this training method. However, nobody has ever finished it all. The best of us only made it to two months and twenty-one days..."

"Traveling in the boundless hell alone. All worlds stay in one's heart. Countless hardships make an immortal. Human Realm Upon Heavens is ahead of us!" Feng Wuying recited and then sighed.

"Eighty-one difficulties! The last nine days, he will have to get through eighty-one kinds of difficulties everyday..."

"It is impossible to hold on all the nine days."

"I don't care if it is possible or not. What I want to see is Ye Chongxiao staying a few days longer than I did. That will be a great victory!" Lei Dadi was steady and calm. "I only care about one thing about you two. Are you ready?"

"More or less." Feng Wuying smiled bitterly. "We have to put our lives in risk to keep it running."

The three old men looked solemn.

The three months of hell was definitely an important experience for the young disciple. However, it was also a great challenge for the three grandmasters who would host the three months of hell!

"I don't care about anything else! You two better keep the three months running... even if you will die, you better die after Ye Chongxiao is done with it!"

"Me too. I will also only die after the three months of hell finishes!" Lei Dadi humphed. "Now, go to sleep, both of you!"

Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu turned over and left, murmuring, "Old bastard! You are just two days earlier than us to join the sect. We are all going to die soon now. Why don't you quit being arrogant..."

Lei Dadi saw his two younger disciple brothers leave, then he suddenly smiled. He murmured, "You two little bastards... after all these years, you never changed a bit of your personalities..."

...

Chapter 821: Beginning of Hell!

There was no other people who dared to call the old Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu little bastards. Lei Dadi was the only one.

Lei Dadi was lost in thoughts at the moment. He thought of the old days when he and the others were cultivating, playing and joking around in the sect.

Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu had never changed. In fact, Lei Dadi hadn't changed either.

"Time flies... Is that day coming soon..." Lei Dadi shook his head and sighed. Then he went to bed too.

When the special training began the next morning, not only Ye Xiao, but also the three old men should be well prepared. In the three months, they would very likely work even harder than Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao had casually chosen a bed and it happened to be Lei Dadi's bed. Lei Dadi had to find somewhere else to rest.

He walked to Feng Wuying's cottage but didn't see him on the bed. He looked to the floor and found the two old fellas snoring on the floor.

The bed was too small for two people, so they actually slept on the floor.

"Little bastards. How could you just sleep on the floor. Where is your manners... Great grandmasters of Cold Moon Palace... You actually look like two little puppies in winter..." Lei Dadi scolded in a low voice. However, he walked to his two disciple brothers and lied close to them.

He then closed his eyes.

He felt like it was back to the old days. Their master brought four orphans back to the sect. That night, the four of them slept on the

floor just like that. The next morning, Lei Dadi found they were cuddling each other to keep themselves warm.

A big warm smile showed up on his face as he thought of the old days.

Thinking of the old days when the four of them hung out together, he smiled sincerely. At this moment, his eyes were crystal like a kid's eyes. "Those were happy days... If Dian Changkong is still alive, we may have the opportunity to lie together like this... That would be so great... Ah..."

He sighed and then closed his eyes.

In the cottage.

There was wheatgrass covering the floor.

Three old men whose beards were grey, cuddling each other while sleeping on the floor...

Each of them showed a kid's smile on the face.

They were happy staying together, alive or dead.

Before dawn!

Ye Xiao opened his eyes and saw some clothes. It was shining with a cold and dim glow. It was clothes made from Star Steel!

Star Steel had star in its name. It was just as precious as stars. It was abstracted from the fallen meteorite in the world. It was over a hundred times heavier than normal iron steel. The clothes before Ye Xiao's eyes was completely made from Star Steel. It must have weighed over one thousand and five hundred kilograms!

"Are you awake? Get your ass up and put on the clothes then. That's new clothes for you! Star Suit! It's such a precious stuff!" Lei Dadi smiled and talked. He looked so warm and friendly.

Ye Xiao blinked and said, "Master Lei, I am grateful that you are giving me this clothes. I guess this Star Suit isn't something ordinary. It must be also extraordinary in weight. Am I right?"

"Not really. It's only one thousand seven hundred and seventy kilograms. You are in the initial levels of Spirit Origin Stage. You can handle it. I am sure!" Lei Dadi smiled. "From now on, what I want you to do is to wear it. Even when you feel like you are dying, you still have to continue wearing it!"

"What would happen after that?" Ye Xiao asked.

"You keep wearing then! Every second count! You must keep going as long as you can!" Lei Dadi was showing such a good temper.

"I see. I must keep wearing until the three months training is finished!" Ye Xiao spoke in a deep voice.

"That's right. The three months of hell is truly the life of hell. It concerns your future. It depends on this special training whether you can go up to the heavens or not!" Lei Dadi spoke solemnly, "The entire training process is to refine your bones, Jing and Mai, dantian, spiritual power... Remember, only when you get out from hell can you have the opportunity to get to heaven! Do you understand?"

Ye Xiao became serious. "Yes, I do."

And then he murmured, "Only when I get out from hell can I have the opportunity to get to heaven! That's right. Nothing good comes easy. No pain, no gain. The harder I work, the more I achieve!"

His eyes lit up!

"Hell and heaven are neighbors! However, only from hell could he go to heaven, while he would only go to hell when he falls from heaven."

"Such a simple truth. Success and failure. Life and death."

Lei Dadi picked up the Star Suit and helped Ye Xiao put it on. Ye Xiao could put it on by himself for sure, but it would take more time and energy. Ye Xiao's energy was something they wouldn't

want to waste. That was why Master Lei had to help him with the clothes.

Yun Piaoliu and Feng Wuying just stood aside with a solemn face. They were looking forward to it!

The Star Suit had one weskit, one waistcoat, and two leggings.

Four pieces in total!

Ye Xiao put on the Star Suit and felt like he was carrying a mountain. He was level five of Spirit Origin Stage now. That clothes shouldn't be too heavy for him. However, it was in Qing-Yun Realm. The gravity was different from Land of Han-Yang.

He was able to wear it and move freely. However, he knew he would be ninety percent slower!

It was over a thousand kilograms after all. That was over twenty times heavier than Ye Xiao's body!

Not everybody could handle that weight.

"In these three months, you must never take off the suit!" Lei Dadi said, "Now, the first two hours, you better get used to it. Wear the suit. Run to the top of that mountain over there as fast as you can. There is a Star Steel bucket. Use it, bring back a bucket of water, and pour the water into the big vat over here. What I want you to do is to fill the big vat within two hours."

"Besides, during the two hours, you must not have any food, dan beads, medicines, and not even water."

"Finish it in two hours!" Lei Dadi put a sandglass on the floor and said, "Begin!"

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He just rushed out fast.

He knew this was just a beginning!

However, it began with such a big difficulty.

...

Chapter 822: 2500 Kilograms!

Ye Xiao already began sweating after running for a mile.

He was carrying over 1500 kilograms in weight, and he had to run in the fastest speed... That was such a challenge.

Ye Xiao was murmuring in the heart, [Pah! I have grown up in a miserable situation!]

He reached that mountaintop quite fast during the first round. He saw a well... but it was so unexpectedly deep. The well was about a hundred meters deep. He looked down through the well and only saw a bit of water at the bottom.

Unluckily, there was no windlass.

There was no other bucket to lift the water up.

There were stairs though. It led to the bottom of the well. Apparently, Ye Xiao had to move down on the stairs step by step and fill his bucket before heading back to the ground... And then he had to run back to the big vat!

Ye Xiao sighed, and then jumped down to the well without hesitation!

He jumped, but not far. As he jumped down, he kept holding the wall of the well every fifteen meters, so as to keep a steady speed. If he didn't wear that Star Suit, he could probably just jump to the bottom of the well. However, his overall weight was just too much...

If he truly just directly jumped to the bottom, he would be like a shooting meteorite hitting the earth.

After a while, he finally got to the bottom of the well. Luckily, he found that Star Steel Bucket immediately.

He had been wondering what to do if he couldn't find that Star Steel Bucket.

He would have to find the bucket first!

However, it wasn't too bad. He didn't need to look for a bucket. Even so, when he saw the bucket, he smiled bitterly.

He wouldn't need to look for the bucket or do something else. That bucket itself was enough to make him feel sick. The bucket was big, but with a small volume. The bucket wall was so thick. There was just a small room for water. It could contain no more than twenty-five kilograms of water.

However, when he lifted p the bucket, it was at least 750 kilograms in his hand!

That was such a joke!

"What the hell!" Ye Xiao knew that it was even worse than what he could imagine. He didn't hesitate as he hurriedly filled the bucket and took the bucket out. As he finally jumped up to the ground, he was gasping badly. He was now weighing about 2500 kilograms in total! The water and his body were just a small piece! He had jumped up from about one hundred meters under the ground. That consumed a lot of his energy. However, he didn't have time for resting. Without hesitation, he lifted the bucket and started to run back to the big vat!

When he saw the big vat, he was shocked.

[What the bloody hell? Are you trying to get me killed?]

When he went to the well, as he remembered, the big vat was at least half filled. However, now it was totally empty. There was not even one drop of water in it.

The big vat could at least contain 250 kilograms of water.

Ye Xiao felt speechless about it.

He could take back about 25 kilograms at a time. That meant he would have to go ten times at least, within only two hours.

The well was only ten miles away from the vat. That truly wasn't

so far away.

However, he was weighing over 1500 kilograms clothes and he also held the 750 kilograms bucket. All in all, that was over 2500 kilograms of weight. It would be too much a burden for him to run over ten times!

Besides, he had to get down to the bottom of the well for ten times too! That was about one hundred meters down there!

When he first got down, he didn't take that heavy bucket. Now he did!

He gritted with his teeth and poured the water into the big vat. And then he took the bucket and ran away fast again.

He had poured out the water in the bucket, yet he didn't feel it lost weight at all.

2500 kilograms and 2525 kilograms... There was barely any difference.

For Ye Xiao, 25 kilograms meant nothing at this moment!

The three old men were looking at Ye Xiao. They felt satisfied. "He moved fast enough for the first round after all. It took less than one-twentieth of the time. Not bad."

"I think that is not good enough. We all have done this before. He will only become slower and slower." Lei Dadi said, "The first round didn't show anything."

"I think that bucket in his hand is bigger than I expected..." Yun Piaoliu frowned, "Is it that 500 kilograms one or that 750 kilograms one?"

"750 kilograms," Lei Dadi answered.

"Oh really... Isn't it too heavy?" Feng Wuying frowned. "That means Chongxiao is bearing over 2500 kilograms in total and he has to run over three hundred miles within two hours. It should be as much as running a hundred miles to get down that well and get

up ten times."

"It should be as much as running three hundred miles! The last several rounds down to the bottom of the well will be totally torturing."

Lei Dadi said, "I didn't expect him to finish all the three months of hell. I am ready to see the worst now. If he can make seven rounds within two hours, it will be enough. One more round he can do, the higher position he will be in the future!"

As they were speaking, Ye Chongxiao had already shown up from the well. He ran so fast backward with a bucket in his hand!

For the next period of time, he didn't slow down a bit at all. He had made five rounds already. He was sweating badly and his heart was beating heavily as if it was about to pop out from his chest.

After finishing the fifth bucket, he felt a bit relaxed. Suddenly, his eyes felt blank and dizzy in the head. Apparently, he was going to run out of energy.

This was only the fifth round!

It was just half of what he had to do!

At this moment, he finally realized what hell meant!

This was the first two hours of a whole day!

In the sixth round, he finally slowed down.

"It is beyond my expectations. Not bad." Lei Dadi looked at Ye Xiao. "It is only one-third of the two hours. He has already finished half of the job. However, the key of this training has just begun. The most important part of the first two hours is about to come. Let's see whether he can handle it or not."

...

Chapter 823: Outperform!

"He has to hold it. I don't care if he is able to." Yun Piaoliu said, "However, as far he shows, eight rounds must be his limit. After eight rounds, he will have no energy to go on, no matter how bad he wants to finish it. He is not to be blamed after all."

"So, let's see whether he can hang on till the eighth round!"

Three old men nodded together and watched Ye Xiao again.

Ye Xiao was gasping. He had just finished the seventh round. His face already turned pale. He seemed to be shaking. Apparently, he was running out of energy right now!

Even a small movement required all of his efforts after that seventh round. If he ever loosened his mind, he might fall down and never be able to get up again!

The eighth!

Ye Xiao sat in the bottom of the well and gasped. He felt it must feel better to die than to go on with this training.

However, after gasping a few times, he took that bucket and started to jump up.

For a few times, he nearly fell off...

...

Another bucket of water was poured into the vat. It was now eighty percent full!

One-third of the time was still left for him. The sandglass was running.

Ye Xiao took the bucket and rushed out again.

The ninth round.

It was out of the three grandmasters' expectation now.

They thought Ye Xiao would never go on over eight rounds.

What they expected from Ye Xiao was to go eight rounds!

However, Ye Xiao's insistence had gone way beyond their expectation!

"Good lad! We all saw it. He was running out of energy since the third round. During the fifth round, he had almost collapsed. The four rounds after the fifth, he was purely driven by his will. He is squeezing every drop of energy in his body." Lei Dadi praised. "Good disciple. Tough bones!"

"That's right. We all see his real condition. He has used up almost all of his energy, yet he is still holding it."

The three old guys saw Ye Xiao actually moving faster when he was doing the ninth round.

"He didn't save energy for this!" Lei Dadi had sharp eyes. "He has just broken his limitation! How amazing he is! It surely opens my eyes!"

"He actually broke his limits..." Yun Piaoliu and Feng Wuying were also shocked. They all knew how difficult it was for a cultivator to break the limit! A cultivator like Ye Xiao had always been pushing himself after all!

It seemed he had really reached the top of his potential.

Because he had broken the limit all of a sudden, he finished ten rounds! Besides, he had started to do the eleventh!

The old men were shocked. Lei Dadi exclaimed, "What the hell is he doing? Is he addicted to that? Why is he still doing it? Is he out of his mind? Is he okay?"

Yun Piaoliu had a more sensitive mind. He pointed at the vat and said, "Brother, you have made it too strict for him. You wanted him to completely fill the vat, not just to fill it with ten buckets of water. The vat contains two hundred and fifty kilograms of water. That bucket contains twenty-five kilograms. There must be some water that spilled out of the bucket. To fill that vat, he had to pour

the eleventh bucket!"

Lei Dadi was stunned.

Feng Wuying said, "This young man is so honest. It is just a small difference, yet he tried his best to fulfill it. I truly don't want to see him get hurt!"

Yun Piaoliu shook the head and said, "He won't. If he didn't break the limit earlier and forcibly go on with the eleventh round, I would definitely go stop him. However, he has indeed broken his limit. One more round won't hurt him. Instead, it will help him. To be honest, I like this kid even more now. I truly know how to pick a good inheritor for myself!"

Lei Dadi and Feng Wuying said at the same time, "Bullsh*t! He is the inheritor for the three of us! What do you mean for yourself!"

Although Ye Xiao had to carry water eleven times to fill that vat, he actually finished it a few minutes before the two hours ended!

When Ye Xiao stood before the three old guys' eyes, he had a pale face as if he would pass out at any second—he felt so exhausted that he might die soon!

His sight was getting darker and blanker. He couldn't stop shaking like he was going to fall right away.

There was no sweat anymore.

In fact, he felt so dry!

It wasn't dry in a good way. He felt that he was dehydrated!

All the water in his body became sweat during the two hours. He was sure that he had at least lost twenty-kilogram of weight!

What was left in his body must only be muscles and blood!

Eleven times going to and fro, it consumed every bit of energy in his body.

At the moment, he was sure about one thing... He was on the

edge of his limit. To move around more, he might just die there!

When he showed up in front the three grandmasters, he didn't know how astonished the three old men were!

Every two hours in the three months was a challenge!

However, he didn't have to perfectly finish all the challenges!

In fact, whoever was in the special training only needed to do their best. That was all!

After all, whoever had the chance to do this training was extremely talented and full of opportunities in the sect. If any of them were exhausted to death during the training, it would be a great loss to the sect. None of the three factions could afford such a loss!

In fact, the master who would host the training for the chosen disciple had the responsibility to keep the disciple alive. A man could be exhausted physically but not mentally. Ye Xiao had just broken his limit in the ninth round. If not, even if he wanted to go on a few more rounds, the old men would stop him. The training aimed at improving a disciple, not to kill him!

The three old men were so astonished. For tens of thousand years, among all the disciples who had the chance to take the three months of hell training, none had ever perfectly finished any challenge during the three months!

...

Chapter 824: Blade Sharpening!

Those who finished about eighty percent were already outstanding figures.

Most of them had just finished seventy percent. Some of them even just finished fifty percent.

In the first two hours challenge, the three old grandmasters only expected Ye Xiao to do eight rounds! They would already be satisfied to see Ye Xiao do eight rounds.

In fact, if Ye Xiao only finished seven, even just six rounds, they would feel it was already acceptable. After all, the three of them only did six or seven rounds back in their days!

However, Ye Xiao was such a tough guy. He did even more than ten rounds! He even did an eleventh round just to follow the instruction of 'completely fill the vat'!

More horribly, after eleven rounds, he still had a few minutes left!

[What the hell is this kid going to be? Monster against heavens?]

The three old men were totally astonished!

[He looks so weak... I guess he will fall with just a touch... How could he be so tough and persevering!]

"What comes next is the second challenge for the next two hours!"

Lei Dadi was an experienced cultivator after all. He was just stunned for a few seconds. Even though he was so shocked, he didn't show it. He announced, "In this challenge, you will have the opportunity to improve the flexibility of your Jing and Mai!"

Then he reached out his hand!

Ye Xiao's exhausted body suddenly flew up to the air.

"No matter how painful you will feel, you must not make a sound! Not to mention scream!"

The next moment, an enormous and rapid power rushed into Ye Xiao's body, rushing inside his Jing and Mai, washing over every inch of his muscles...

It felt like countless sharp knives kept cutting every bit of Ye Xiao's body. It was improving his body bit by bit!

"This is sharpening the blade!"

Lei Dadi didn't stop controlling the pure spiritual qi. It was running inside Ye Xiao's body, activating every cell of his body.

It was such a demanding job to do. The spiritual qi must be neither too small or too massive. If it was too small, it wouldn't improve Ye Xiao at all. However, if it was too much, Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai might all get broken!

He was in risk every second!

This wouldn't improve Ye Xiao's cultivation, but it would refine every inch of his body, so that his body would stay in a perfect status in the future!

Most importantly, every useless bit of his body would be driven out in this challenge!

Ye Xiao felt that every piece of his muscle was being anatomized. He had been through things like this many times though, especially in the present life. When he first cultivate East-rising Purple Qi, and when he first took the supreme dan bead, he had been through so many times of body ablutions.

When Lei Dadi said it would improve the flexibility of his Jing and Mai, he thought it was simply a waste of time. He thought his body was already perfect, that there was no improvement that could be made! And he was sure he could handle the pain in this challenge. However, he didn't know whether this would help him or not, but the pain was definitely something above his

expectation. It was even more painful than being cut bit by bit to death.

He must not make a sound, so he had to endure to the fullest.

Once he opened his mouth, the spiritual power from Lei Dadi would be drained away from his mouth. Every bit of waste would lead to failure!

The challenges he was having now were all what he lacked in his previous life!

No matter what, he wouldn't let the opportunity go. Even though he thought this challenge might not be useful to him, he wouldn't give up on it!

He would love to try! He would try the best he could to hold on with it!

He gritted his teeth and closed his mouth. His face was so unbelievably twisted, yet he didn't make a sound at all.

He didn't even humph!

The three old grandmasters were moved again.

Even iron steel was like soft noodles facing such great power. No matter what, he was allowed to make some noise with the nose. It was the natural reaction after all.

However, he didn't make a sound at all.

His endurance and willpower were shocking and amazing!

"Even with Natural Exquisite Body, no matter how talented he is, he needs to eat, drink, breath... It is still a flesh body after all. So there is always impurity in his body. No matter how many times he has been through ablution, there is always impurity."

Lei Dadi explained while working on it, "However, what we are going to do... is to keep your body stay pure every second of the three months!"

"That is the perfect foundation you can have!"

"It is also where a cultivator's life can rely on!"

"Hold it! No matter how bad it feels, you should hold it. If you can't do this, you will never have the opportunity to go to heaven!"

Lei Dadi had been doing it for about half an hour. Feng Wuying took his turn. Lei Dadi sat down to rest. After another half an hour, Yun Piaoliu took the place.

Till the last thirty minutes, the three of them did it together. It pushed the power of 'sharpening' to the peak!

In two hours, Ye Xiao was kept floating in the air. That extreme pain was increasingly torturing him on every bit of his body. However, he didn't make a sound.

The entire process of this challenge had changed Ye Xiao's recognition for the human body. First of all, Ye Xiao used to think that his body was perfect after all those ablutions. However, when he was enduring the washing of the spiritual power this time, he realized there was so much impurity hidden inside him!

Although the impurity was small and nothing compared to his body, it was still impurity. It would more or less influence his cultivation someday. Bit by bit, it would increase, and when that happened, it would make a serious impact on his cultivation!

Perhaps that was why the disciples in the great sects always had more potential than him in the previous life!

In fact, human body was an unraveled treasure to human beings. In the second challenge, during the entire refining process, his body was improved to a new level! As the refining went on, his body continued improving!

...

Chapter 825: Disengaged Erhuo!

When the spiritual power rushed into his body, it invaded his body. The power was reaching the limit of his body and made Ye Xiao realized where the limit of his body was!

Knowing that it brought such advantage, Ye Xiao felt both painful and happy at the same time. He wanted to finish this torturing process sooner, and he also wanted it to last longer so that he could know and improve his body more!

His endurance ability was so amazing that when the three old men got on it together, they didn't feel amazed anymore!

They were so amazed that they didn't know how to be more amazed than they already were!

For two hours, even iron steel could be melted, yet Ye Xiao actually had made no sound at all!

That was such a strong willpower!

"I think we got a real treasure here." Lei Dadi talked to his younger disciple brothers afterwards. "This young man is so talented. So good. I have never expected that he has such a great willpower! I am sure he will do better than me in this training!"

"I don't think it will be a problem to break your record. In fact, I think he is very likely going to break the record of our sect. Look how tough he is. That shows us a lot about him!"

While Yun Piaoliu said so, he looked a bit scared. "If a man can be so cruel-hearted to himself... I don't know... Whoever is going to be this man's enemy, I guess I must mourn for him..."

The three old men sighed and nodded at the same time.

Finally, it was time for a meal in the morning. Ye Xiao acted like a starving ghost. He was so tired but still couldn't stop eating as much as he could when the food showed up before his eyes. The

three old men had prepared lots of meat that was full of spiritual energy from different kinds of beasts. Ye Xiao ate nearly a dozen kilograms!

He drank half a bucket of water afterwards.

After the meal, right before the next challenge began, he clearly felt the food was all digested in his stomach. There was nothing left after just an hour!

He was starving again. The water he drank was also gone within an hour! It became sweat...

Twenty-four hours, the only spare time he had was the time to eat.

Breakfast, lunch and dinner, he only had no more than fifteen minutes in total.

He spent all the other time in hell.

However, all challenges for the first day, Ye Xiao finished them all perfectly!

When he was having the last meal of this day, Lei Dadi asked him, "Chongxiao, how did you do that? How do you hold on like that? Don't you fear that you would get yourself killed in the training?"

"Master." Ye Xiao respectfully replied to Lei Dadi, "I was thinking... if I died in the training, then I killed myself. That is much better than getting killed by someone else in the martial world."

He was telling the truth. It made the three old men stay quiet for a long time.

The next day, new challenges were waiting for Ye Xiao.

Day by day, time passed by, leaving more and more extreme pain on Ye Xiao...

Everyday, there were different challenges, and he felt like getting

through a lifetime of hardship!

However, he liked such a 'life'! He would love to live it over and over again!

From the fifth day, he clearly felt that his body was improving. The vitality, reaction, sharpness, and all kinds of sensitivities were all boosting.

More than that, his sea of consciousness was expanding, so was the Boundless Space... The Space was also expanding slowly.

That meant his soul power was improving too...

What a great thing for him! He became more enthusiastic about the training. It shocked the three old grandmasters more than once. They kept asking themselves what on earth was this young man. They couldn't believe how the young man could enjoy the extreme pain during the special training! Sometimes, they didn't believe he was a normal human being!

Erhuo had followed Ye Xiao to Cold Moon Palace. During the special three months, Ye Xiao didn't have time for Erhuo.

Before the three months of hell started, Ye Xiao had set Erhuo out and told it, "Go find yourself something to eat! Do not make any troubles! Do not reveal yourself to anybody!"

Erhuo perfectly finished doing two of the three things Ye Xiao asked it to do.

It did find itself more than enough delicious food to eat and also hadn't let anybody else notice its existence.

It did eat a lot everyday and it was enjoying it. In fact, it would definitely do it even if Ye Xiao didn't tell it to.

At the same time, nobody else realized there was a special little cat!

Well... it messed with one thing... 'Do not make troubles!' It failed...

...

That was purely impossible!

Erhuo was a spiritual beast that had been sealed for million years, who was also addicted to delicious food!

To keep it away from troubles...

That was impossible!

During the three months in which Ye Xiao was taking the special training, the entire Cold Moon Palace was nearly turned over by Erhuo!

People in Cold Moon Palace had one thing in common. They were famous in controlling beasts. Everybody in the sect had a spiritual beast!

Especially those beyond level five of Dream Origin Stage. Each of them had their own soul beast as their battle companion at the same time. When Zhan Yunfei was fighting Xiao Monarch in Ye Xiao's previous life, his soul beast, that vulture, actually saved him from Xiao Monarch's attack! Otherwise, Zhan Yunfei should have died for a long time!

The spiritual beasts always stayed in a special space where designed for them. Normally, they wouldn't leave that space, except if they were needed in the battle, or when their masters needed them to cultivate together.

Everybody cherished their soul beast so much. They protected their soul beast as they protected their own lives.

Erhuo had been cautious at the beginning. It was somebody else's place after all. [I am new to this place, with my stupid new master. This is a strange place for me. I must keep myself safe first.] Erhuo knew how important it was to be alive after all.

However, after about five days... Erhuo found that nobody in this place was fast enough to catch up with itself... It was so fast!

[Holy heavens!]

It was overjoyed when it realized it. [Nobody is able to find me, not to mention capture me. Doesn't that mean I can do whatever I want in this place?]

[Oh my heavens, this is awesome!]

So, Prime Master Yue, Yue Changtian, became the first victim.

...

Chapter 826: Where Are the Fish?

Cold Moon Palace was famous for the specialty of controlling beasts. Everybody in the sect had their own soul beasts. They would also raise pet beasts, normally more than just one. That was why in Cold Moon Palace, there were lots of animals. In the sky, on the ground, in the water... there were different kinds of animals in the sect.

Yue Changtian, the Prime Master, liked fish very much.

All the fish he raised were rare species, spiritual fish that had powerful efficacy.

Eating the Silver-scaled Spiritual Fish could make white hair become black. Eating Colorful Saint Fish could increase cultivation. There were also Boneless Fish, which was said to be utterly delicious...

Yue Changtian specially made a few ponds so as to properly raise his fish. He drew the water from the mountaintop of Cold Moon Mountain, which was the restricted area of the sect, to the ponds. That was a huge project.

Yue Changtian liked to watch the fish swimming in the water—when he was sad, happy, worried... For him, it was a good way to calm himself down and make a rational decision.

That was the most enjoyable thing in his life.

He would feel satisfied to just look at the fish swimming in the water, portraying different colors...

His ponds weren't very big. Each pond was about three thousand square meters. There were nine ponds!

The nine ponds were like nine eyes, representing the nine stars in the sky. How marvelous!

In the center of the nine ponds, there was a grassland with trees

and flowers. There was also a footpath across the grassland.

The ponds were deep, but the water was so crystal and clear!

It was totally transparent!

Cold Moon Mountain and the Spiritual Spring were restricted areas of Cold Moon Palace. This Spirit Spring Ponds was Yue Changtian's personal restricted area!

The ponds and the fish in the water belonged to him alone. Nobody was welcomed to this area.

Even Yue Changtian's wife wouldn't go to this place if she didn't have to!

There was a wall around the ponds, keeping everybody else away.

Not far from the wall, there was a place for meeting and discussions. They had discussed and made important plans many times in that place. Some plans were so important that they all had certain effects on the future of Cold Moon Palace. Yue Changtian came up with those plans by himself when he was walking along the ponds.

When he had something in mind, he went to that place to discuss it with others!

When Zhan Yunfei brought the news back to them, Yue Changtian was shocked!

He had been sitting by the pond silently for so many days while thinking of it. He wanted to figure out what to do with that secret organization.

It was too important!

The gate was closed, but he still had sent out four elders and six disciples to go out and investigate on it.

Zhan Yunfei didn't go on that mission.

If he went out, it would be too conspicuous. Even a disguise

couldn't help.

If he went out, eighty percent possibility that he wouldn't make it back alive!

Cold Moon Palace could not afford that loss. They wouldn't take that risk.

Yue Changtian was silent during this time. He was waiting for the reports back.

He would like to hear even just a bit information from those who were out for investigation, so that he could make a plan according to what he knew.

However, day after day, there was nothing back.

The ten people outside would connect to the sect every single day. If somebody didn't contact the sect for two days, the sect would send out several superior cultivators to help!

That meant that man who lost contact must have touched something the secret organization wouldn't want him to.

"How could this happen in the martial world? When was such a secret organization is built in the world, this is not a simple event..." Yue Changtian murmured, "This secret organization may be even more horrible than Xiao Monarch in the old days... If the battle is on, will it..."

"Well... This organization has been so cautious and unpredictable. I wonder, when our men come back, how do I make sure they are the same people I sent out for the mission?"

"Is it possible that they are replaced?"

Yue Changtian thought of that and then immediately walked out the door. He sent for some men to go for a secret inspection to make sure everybody is fine...

However, when Yue Changtian returned to his ponds and prepared for deep thoughts, he noticed something was missing...

There was nothing he could see that was missing though.

He was confused, but then he was lost in thoughts again. After all, there was something really important that needed him to consider. He wouldn't want to waste time on other matters.

After a few days, he found out... [Hmmm?]

[The fish in my ponds... Am I losing some fish here?]

He checked on the fish carefully...

The fish were all priceless treasures, so it was always difficult to raise them well. However, as long as the fish got old enough, they would live for a really long time. There were lots of small fish in the pond before his eyes. Most of the fish were natural born. There were also some really big fish.

At least over one hundred fish that were over two dozen kilograms. When the big fish were swimming in the water, it made a wonderful scene.

Under the bright sunshine, the pond was filled with different colors. All kinds of splendid colors moved slowly in the water...

However, Yue Changtian found that... it seemed some big fish were gone. There was only half of them remained!

Most importantly, he found that the fish seemed panicking. They should be casual.

The fish all knew Yue Changtian, so they would never be afraid of him. However, as he got close to the pond, the fish all swam away fast.

They were frightened.

There were several fish, which were biggest, that had a little consciousness. Every time when Yue Changtian got close to the pond, the biggest fish would move over to him as if they were talking to him...

However, three of the four biggest fish were missing...

That was... abnormal!

Was it...

"Gone? Missing?" Yue Changtian was alerted, "Where are they?"

...

Chapter 827: Adorable Cat!

Yue Changtian called the fish. Suddenly, a big crowd of fish gathered together from everywhere in the pond before his eyes. Water splashed. All fish were moving to the same place, however, they were still panicking. It was obvious to Yue Changtian.

He roughly counted the fish. He was shocked. "My Saint Spiritual Fish... Thirty of them are lost! The biggest... Colorful Fish! Ten are lost... Chaos Fish... All gone! What the hell is going on..."

He was so distressed all of a sudden that he nearly passed out.

In fact, there were still fish of every kind in the pond. However, those big fish which had lived for over one hundred years, especially the Chaos Fish, were gone!

Only those fish below two-kilogram in weight were still in the pond!

Yue Changtian was suffering a heartache as if it was bleeding in there!

Chaos Fish was the most fabulous fish in the Qing-Yun Realm. As long as a Chaos Fish had lived over one hundred and ninety-nine years, there would be a wisp of chaotic purple qi.

Whoever ate that Chaos Fish could obtain the purple qi!

Yue Changtian had been waiting for so many years. He was piling up the Chaos Fish to one hundred!

If he could absorb one hundred wisps of chaotic purple qi in Chaos Fish, he would improve to the top phase of level nine of Dao Origin Stage from the middle phase. After that, the purple fish would help him a lot to enter the Tittle Phrase!

He had been feeding the fish so many treasures for so many years...

After all the efforts, there were already over eighty Chaos Fish in

the ponds!

Each grown Chaos Fish was over thirty kilograms. The biggest of his Chaos Fish was over fifty kilograms!

However... now he had none!

All those with chaotic purple qi were gone. Even those which were about to have purple qi inside were gone too. All Chaos Fish that were over twenty kilograms were gone...

"Who stole my fish!"

He shouted in fury!

That was a furious shout from the bottom of his heart and soul!

He was freaking out. He was shaking and suffering a heartache.

However, he didn't know this was just a beginning of his great loss.

It was just a warmup!

That was it!

He was going crazy.

It had been so hard for him to collect the fish. That was such a difficult task. He had almost gathered all the forces of Cold Moon Palace to search for the fry in Qing-Yun Realm. After spending all the time, money, and sacrificing all those men, the fish in the ponds were all he had gotten.

What made him feel lucky and proud was that he had the most spiritual fish in Qing-Yun Realm.

On one hand, he liked fish. On the other hand, he needed the fish to cultivate himself.

With the fish, he could mold his temperament, improve his cultivation, and enjoy his life.

He had fed the fish all kinds of treasure so as to make the fish grow bigger. In order to keep the water in a stable temperature, he

had to consume tons of spiritual stones.

He was so close to a harvest, but then it was all gone!

All was gone!

He had devoted so much to the fish, yet now they all became another's benefits.

He didn't even know who actually stole his fish!

[What the bloody heavens!]

Yue Changtian nearly coughed out a mouthful of blood. Calm and steady as he was, he couldn't help raging up... He wanted to kill!

"Who is it!" He suppressed the impulse to kill so hard and shouted out furiously.

Beside his feet, in the bush, there was a snow white colored small cat. It was lying there leisurely. It looked so innocent as it stared at Yue Changtian. [What is wrong with this man? Why... Why is he so angry? Isn't he the host of the entire sect? Where is his tolerance and manner? How disappointing!]

Erhuo was obviously living in this place now.

When it came to this place and found all those fish, it was spirited up. However, the entrance to the ponds were strictly guarded. If it kept sneaking in every day, even though it was rather fast, it would still be risky.

Besides, it didn't need to take that risk at all!

So it decided to act cute.

Hmmm, acting cute indeed.

One day, Erhuo showed up before Yue Changtian's eyes casually.

Yue Changtian had just recruited a brilliant disciple, so he was feeling good that day. Cold Moon Palace was going to embrace a bright future. How could he not feel happy about it?

He was so vigorous that day!

When he was vigorously having a walk, he found something in the grass, which was white like snow.

He took a closer look and found that it was a cat.

That was... such an adorable cat.

The cat was no bigger than a fist. Nose, eyes, tails and claws were all so cute. That was like a cat from heavens.

The small cat was like an art piece in Yue Changtian's eyes.

When it looked at him with its innocent eyes...

Yue Changtian was moved.

He looked at it and made sure it was just a cat. Such an adorable cat was so eye-catching!

Even Yue Changtian, such a big figure in the world, wanted to play with it. The small cat seemed frightened though. It seemed to need care so much. When Yue Changtian got closer to it, it would run away in a panic. When it stopped, it would look at him with innocence in the eyes...

[This is so cute!]

[I like it!]

Cold Moon Palace was well known for the specialty of beast training. Yue Changtian was the host of the sect. How could he let the adorable cat go away! [I am definitely able to conquer a small cat!]

[My fish must be irresistibly attractive to all cats. It may be a waste to feed this cat my fish, but I am sure it won't have much food, considering how adorable and tiny it is.]

So Yue Changtian made a decision that he would regret for the rest of his life. [Little kitty, I know you want some fish from me. You want to stay in this place!]

[You know what, I will let you stay.]

[It's good to have a companion after all.]

[It is just a cat. It knows nothing. All I want is it to with me here. Look at it. How adorable. I may feed it with some fish...]

[I may talk to you when I have troubles in mind. You won't understand anyway... Am I right, little kitty?]

...

Chapter 828: Tell a Thief about Theft!

After all, it felt much better to talk to a cat than a bunch of fish.

Fish would swim away before he finished talking. Maybe it took twenty fish to hear all the words he said.

A cat was different.

It was so well-behaved, sitting there, blinking, staring at him and listening to him.

How nice!

Back to the present, Yue Changtian was furious!

"Where is my fish?" He quickly suppressed the emotion. "What is going on?"

Then he was lost in thoughts.

Erhuo quietly walked out from the bush and lied by the pond. It flicked its small ears from time to time, looking at the fish in the water, showing a greedy face.

However, Yue Changtian didn't care. [All cats like to eat fish. No cats can resist my spiritual fish. If it doesn't want to eat my fish, I would consider it a weird thing!]

[No matter what, it can't eat much even if I let it eat as much as it can.]

[A cat can never resist the taste of fish. But... look at you, so small. Can you really catch one fish?]

[Chaos Fish are probably the best fish here. It is perfect for high-level cultivators. However, grown Chaos Fish that already have purple qi are as powerful as a martial artist. People below Dream Origin Stage are impossible to hurt grown Chaos Fish. You are just a small cat. Can you really catch them?]

That was why Yue Changtian didn't care whether the little cat

would eat his fish at all!

[I have more than a hundred thousand fish here!]

[Big, small, golden, silver, colorful...]

[If you are capable enough, just go get yourself some fish. It will save my time after all. I won't need to clean the ponds every now and then. However, you are too small. You won't be able to eat as many as I need to clean away...]

[I guess it won't eat as many fish as there will be more born soon.]

"Tell me, kitty, who stole my fish?" Yue Changtian asked Erhuo.

Erhuo looked up with confusion in its eyes and then meowed.

"Somebody must have stolen my fish!" Yue Changtian kept talking.

Erhuo answered, "Meow..."

"I guess that is a yes. But who is it?" Yue Changtian nodded and said, "Many people know I have these fish. However, not many of them know the efficacy of each kind of these fish."

Erhuo flicked the ear and said, "Meow? ..."

"Whoever wanted to get benefit from the fish should be in certain cultivation levels." Yue Changtian frowned.

Erhuo blinked. "Meow..."

"Whoever stole my fish should be at least in Dao Origin Stage... Beyond level five... Hmmm... Level six. Otherwise, those fish wouldn't do any good." Yue Changtian murmured, "You definitely don't know how sneaky that thief was. All fully grown fish are gone, especially Chaos Fish. Not one survived. I wonder who on earth could do that so quietly..."

Erhuo rubbed its whiskers. "Meow..."

"Only those who knows how to train beasts and how to control my fish could do that so quietly. Besides, nobody from outside the

sect can get in this place. The gate is closed. The thief must be people in my sect. Only people in my sect are able to quietly get in this place and steal my fish silently." Yue Changtian was quite sure about it. "I am being so smart on this. What do you say?"

Erhuo waved its tail and answered in a rather adorable way, "Meow, meow..."

"The thief dares to steal fish from here and is able to steal fish from me. It must be somebody who has a high position in the sect..." Yue Changtian frowned, "Am I right?"

Erhuo rubbed its neck and answered, "Meow!"

"I guess I have to pay extra attention to all the people here." Yue Changtian gritted his teeth and said, "If any of my people wants to eat fish, I will give them some for sure. All they have to do is to ask me for it. Stealing fish from me, that is unacceptable! All fish are stolen... that is too greedy!"

Erhuo meowed again. It meant 'you are right, absolutely right, brilliant'!

In fact, it was having secret thoughts in mind. [I guess I need to improve my theft ability. That was so close. I have to be more careful here. I don't want to draw his attention to me after all. Well, those fish are carrying purple qi... I had to eat them...]

[Hmmm... I have eaten all those purple qi stupid fish. I guess I shouldn't get fish from this pond. Maybe another pond?]

[Good! Change a pond then. Meow! What a smart and beautiful cat I am!]

[This big tall fool is actually the host of this sect... Look how he talked to me, the thief, about the theft... He actually told me everything about his plan on how to keep his eyes on the ponds... Wait. You have told me everything so clearly... How do you catch me? I guess it must hurt me really badly if I still fall to your trap...]

[Hmm... There are several other ponds. I swear I will only catch

one fish from each pond every day!]

[I believe that won't draw his attention...]

[Maybe the fish grows faster... Nobody will find out.]

[What a smart cat I am!]

Erhuo was deep in thoughts, making its evil plans. It half closed its eyes and looked so leisure. It was still so adorable.

Yue Changtian had made the plan, so he was relaxed. He talked to Erhuo seriously, "So I will get it done this way. What do you think?"

Erhuo acted excited and answered, "Meow...!"

[That is such a brilliant plan!]

[It will never keep me from catching fish! What a genius plan!]

After that, Yue Changtian was no longer interested in having a conversation. Erhuo kept waving its tail and walked away elegantly. It stepped on the green grass with its clean and white paws. It was going to run after some butterflies...

Yue Changtian looked at Erhuo and smiled with pleasure. "How adorable... What a pity. You are not a spiritual beast. Otherwise, I may raise you well. At least you can be a pet to me..."

Erhuo's ears flicked. It gritted and thought, [You bastard, how dare you make me a foolish pet of yours? You wish! Wait and see how I play you around!]

...

Chapter 829: Comforted Erhuo!

"Such an adorable thing can only live in the world for several years. What a shame. When I get some good dan beads, such as Snow Wind Dan, I must feed the cat and see whether it will bring a miracle..." Yue Changtian obviously liked the cat so much. He actually started wishful thinking about it...

Wishful thinking was mostly considered derogatory, but not always!

From the next morning, Yue Changtian kept staying hidden. He operated his spiritual mind to monitor the surroundings.

Erhuo walked over to him in an elegant way. Yue Changtian hushed it, "No! Stop walking over... You will draw their attentions..."

He waved his hand to drive Erhuo away.

Erhuo just wanted to see how things were going... It would love to get away, so it left immediately. It quietly went to another pond from the bush... It was going to the pond which was farthest from Yue Changtian...

Yue Changtian was looking around with full concentration.

On the other side, Erhuo silently got close to the water, reached a paw into the water and waved...

It was almost silent. Its paw was making light vortexes on the water...

However, those were small vortexes that could hardly be seen. It wouldn't even affect the fish when the fish were moving under the water...

In fact, Erhuo didn't really want to touch the fish...

[These are so small... It is not enough to fill the crevice between my teeth!]

Under the water, the vortex was silently making strong flows. Some fish were naturally driven by the flow, moving over to Erhuo...

Finally, there was a big fish, about forty kilograms, shining bright lights. The fish was unwary... swimming leisurely... waving its tail...

It was getting closer and closer.

Erhuo suddenly stared at it and made a suppressing gaze on the fish.

The fish was shocked by the surprising suppression. Suddenly, Erhuo reached out its paw and grabbed the fish out of the water.

That was such a beautiful scene. A small white cat grabbed a dozens of times bigger size fish out of the water. That was unbelievable!

Great pain hit the fish and it attempted to escape. However, it was too late. Erhuo's small paw had slapped it, and water was drained out of its body.

After a while, after a series of movements Erhuo did on the fish, the fish was becoming smaller and smaller. Gradually, it became just as small as a human hand. Finally, Erhuo was bigger than the fish. It opened its mouth and ate the fish in one bite!

It chewed the skin, bones, scales and then swallowed them all. And then it stretched itself before a meow of satisfaction! [Delicious!]

[One of the most delicious things!]

Erhuo should thank that Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. When that fish was turning into a dragon, it expelled everything superfluous off its body and became so small. Erhuo felt so good when it ate that fish.

Erhuo had spent a few days to figure out a method to turn the

fish smaller after failing over a hundred times. It made the fish become smaller but still maintained all the good parts in it. That was such a brilliant way to eat the fish!

What was expelled from the fish... was all just water. Erhuo wouldn't want that at all.

After enjoying the good meal, Erhuo rubbed its mouth and then got back to where it stayed.

It looked at Yue Changtian and found him still staying there. It felt relaxed and went back to that pond where it just grabbed a fish... It stuck its paw into the water and started to wave and wave again...

Why didn't Erhuo go to another pond? It had planned to grab one fish in one pond.

Well, that fish it just ate was too good. Erhuo just wanted to eat one more!

So it took one more!

Another one!

[Two more! I promise! Two more and I will go to another pond...]

One more again! Another one again...

[Oh this is so good... I can't have enough... Two more and I will go...]

Another one...

[I don't want to break my own words but this is too good!]

[That stupid Prime Master wouldn't see this anyway... Two more... Let me just have two more...]

Erhuo didn't leave this pond until thirty big fish. It ate enough now and finally walked away. [Tomorrow, I will go to another pond!]

[I still like this pond!]

[But I will stick to my plan!]

Erhuo showed up before Yue Changtian's eyes, looking at him with its adorable eyes. "Meow," it said. That meant 'did you catch anybody?'

Yue Changtian frowned and said, "That thief didn't come. He got lucky today..."

Erhuo waved its tail and disappeared into the bush.

[Didn't come?]

[Why didn't he?]

[Because I am catching the fish right under your gaze!]

[Now I get to leave. See you around...]

"Come earlier tomorrow. Stay with me. I am going to get that thief out," Yue Changtian talked to Erhuo while facing its little cute butts. He thought that god must have a brilliant handcraft, because it made the little cat so beautiful and cute.

Erhuo heard him and meowed.

[Do you think I need your invitation? How wonderful this place is! As long as there are still fish, I will come early everyday!] Erhuo shook its cute small tail and entered a small hole and then disappeared... It returned to the Boundless Space.

Apparently, this was absolutely way beyond Ye Xiao's capability. At least Ye Xiao couldn't enter the Space so freely!

It ate enough, so it wanted to do something to digest the fish in the stomach. It started to train the snakes.

It knew Ye Xiao was going to be 'tortured' for three months...

[I heard he will be tortured by three old men for three months...]

[I never knew he is a... masochist... You never know someone from their appearance...]

[Three months... That's ninety days... Such a long time!]

...

The next seven days, Erhuo came to the ponds to get fish every morning. It always wanted to have enough fish, but it was never enough.

Yue Changtian had been watching the ponds, waiting for the thief everyday, but he never saw anything.

After seven days, over three hundred fish had been swallowed by Erhuo in the farthest ponds. Yue Changtian still didn't notice anything.

"What is going on?" Yue Changtian asked Erhuo, "Why didn't the thief come again? Is it possible that he knows I am here waiting for him? So he didn't dare to mess with me?"

...

Chapter 830: The Space Changed!

Erhuo was speechless. "Meow..."

[Oh the thief came to steal your fish and showed up before your eyes every single day... Really!]

[You just couldn't notice it. Just blame yourself!]

...

Finally, after half a month.

"Ah..." Yue Changtian shouted with anger. He was furious. "Damn it, damn it, damn it, damn it, fxck that fish thief... No wonder nobody showed up for days... That filthy thief has stolen my fish from the other side..."

...

One month later.

"Who is it... This is so weird... It doesn't seem to be human anymore..." Yue Changtian was freaking out. When he looked at Erhuo, he almost cried. "Who on earth stole my fish. Why can you be so shameless. When is it going to end... I can't live with this anymore..."

Erhuo looked so innocent. "Meow!"

...

The month had been such a good time for Erhuo. However, for Ye Xiao, it was like thirty reincarnations!

Everyday, he felt like he had died several times!

What came after his miserable feelings were the fact that the three old men were completely stunned, shocked, astonished, frightened... Ye Chongxiao finished every challenge perfectly!

When the first stage of the three months was finished, Ye Xiao overdid three tasks!

[That is...]

"This man is not a human! He is absolutely a monster!" Lei Dadi was so speechless. At the end, he gave such a conclusion.

He looked at the book in his hand. All subjects were ticked with red circles. He was shaking because of astonishment.

In the tens of thousand years of history, there were less than one thousand men who went through the three months special training!

Every one of them had a book to record their performance in the trial as a reference to the next generation.

Those who couldn't hold on for longer than one month wouldn't have the chance to be recorded in a book.

Those who finished one month would be recorded in one book. Those who finished one and a half month would be recorded in the second book. Those who finished two months got recorded in the third book. After that, every single day counted. Each book had the record for those who finished two months and one day, two months and two days, two months and three days...

In the book of all 'one month' elites, Ye Chongxiao was the only one who actually got such perfect marks on every subject in the history!

The second record holder was the man who was known as the most talented disciple of the sect. He had just finished eighty percent of every challenge!

However, it was already a high record that no other people could ever get a chance to break!

Now there was Ye Chongxiao!

He had created a record of perfection!

In fact, it was more than perfection. He had done much more than he was required to do! For example, he carried the water

eleven times instead of ten times! Things like this happened so many times! He had done the challenges over one hundred percent!

"The first stage is perfectly finished. Tomorrow, let's begin with the second stage, the second month!" Lei Dadi nearly wept. He had never spoken the word 'perfectly'! He could imagine how Ye Chongxiao would become a great cultivator with a cultivation foundation like the foundation of a million meters high building!

No, it was not just a cultivation foundation!

It was a huge land of cultivation! Untouchable! Indestructible!

No matter how hard the cultivation would be, he would survive it!

"If Chongxiao can finish all the three months training and keep holding the record of the first place..." Yun Piaoliu was so happy that he nearly cried with tears. "Even if I will die after these three months, I will die in joy and happiness!"

"We have focused on training Chongxiao and ignored everything else. However, Prime Master has call for the ten elders and ten great disciples for several official meetings..." Feng Wuying said, "I heard there is a thief in the sect."

"B*llshit!" Lei Dadi was indifferent. He said, "A thief in our sect? Do you believe that nonsense? They must have been busy discussing that secret organization and the conspiracy, so he told everybody they were trying to catch a thief... What a lousy excuse. It will definitely arouse people's suspicion! How foolish!"

"That's true..."

"I don't think they are acting though. Yue Changtian's treasure fish have been stolen during the days. That's the truth." Yun Piaoliu rubbed his beard and said, "I guess it is true. Yue Changtian is freaking out now. He is always calm and steady, except when things concern his beloved fish. I think it is real. Somebody stole

his fish."

"That young stupid man has lost ambition because of those stupid playthings!" Lei Dadi rolled up his eyes and said, "He is the Prime Master of such a great sect! How can he only focus on those deviant things to improve his cultivation! He should have devoted himself in cultivation and take improvement bit by bit! Nobody can just jump up to the top of the heaven! I would love to see his stupid fish all be stolen! It may bring him back to the right path of cultivation soon!"

Ye Xiao was surprised. He was just having some food.

[Fish?]

[Prime Master's fish are stolen?]

[That sounds familiar to me...]

[Would it be...]

[Oh my bloody heavens!]

[Where is Erhuo?]

He hurriedly checked on the Space. He had been busy passing the tasks for the entire one month. He hadn't been in the Space for such a long time. Now he checked on it and he was greatly surprised! The Space was full of purple qi! The purple qi made the entire Space in purple color!

[What the hell?]

[Holy mother of heavens! I haven't put anything into the Space during the month! What happened?]

[Why is it full of purple qi? Where does the purple qi come from?]

[This is...]

[Wait! Erhuo isn't here. Where is it?]

What surprised him more was on the jade plate in that secret tunnel, where Erhuo had stayed when it was still Brother Egg,

there were some supreme dan beads...

He looked at it and those were roughly a dozen dan beads.

Suddenly, there were some supreme dan beads of such good quality. What a surprise! Ye Xiao knew about Erhuo. If Ye Xiao didn't urge it, normally it would definitely be lazy when making dan beads.

...

Chapter 831: Assassins Went Up!

When Ye Xiao wasn't urging Erhuo, it actually made some supreme dan beads. That meant Erhuo must have gotten lots of good stuff. Otherwise, it wouldn't make so many supreme dan beads itself!

[It must be a huge theft event out there that Prime Master Yue's fish got stolen!]

[Well... I hope it won't get caught.]

Ye Xiao immediately gave up that idea.

[There must be a lot of people in Qing-Yun Realm who can easily catch me. However, there must be much fewer who can catch Erhuo. At least in Cold Moon Palace, nobody can catch it!]

Ye Xiao was thinking about something else that confused him. Under the watch of Prime Master Yue's level nine of Dao Origin Stage cultivation, how did Erhuo steal the fish without being noticed?

That was the real confusing part...

Ye Xiao didn't know that Erhuo had become an honored guest of Yue Changtian. In the wise Prime Master Yue Changtian's eyes, even the ten great elders were suspicious. He could only trust them fifty percent. That little cat was the only one that he fully trusted!

He believed it was impossible to be the thief!

Every day, he would discuss about the theft problem with Erhuo.

Surely, even though Erhuo understood what Yue Changtian said, Yue Changtian knew nothing from Erhuo's meow. He could only make a guess when Erhuo talked to him. The truth was that even if Erhuo told him everything it had done, he still wouldn't know a clue. He was going farther and farther from the truth!

If Ye Xiao knew about it, he would cough out a mouthful of

blood!

[Is there anything more ridiculous than this?]

No matter how ridiculous it was, no matter how Erhuo stole the fish, the second month of the training had begun for Ye Xiao!

...

Somewhere else in Qing-Yun Realm.

A group of people was guarding carriages on the way across a valley.

Everyone was holding a weapon in the hand as if their enemies would show up at any second. They were alerted. Everything was like the sign of an ambush for them.

However, the next moment, a stream of sword light suddenly struck down from the sky and then swept over the entire group of people. Countless human heads flew up to the air. Suddenly, a slim figure made a palm strike to break the flagpole. He grabbed the flagpole and jumped up. The next moment, that flagpole fell down fast along with the flag on it. That man was gone!

In the middle of the group, a stout middle-aged man had just drawn his sword from the scabbard. He was shocked and he was sweating!

"Who the hell is that man? How did he know that I have hidden the Blood Dragon Ginseng in that flagpole?" The middle-aged man only had one thought in mind.

"I am done. This is totally f*cked up."

A lot of martial artists were shouting around him, "Protect the carriages! Protect the carriages! We can just make a new flagpole! Don't risk your lives for a flagpole! That man is trying to make us angry and draw us away to chase him. We can't leave! If we get away, his men will attack the carriages! Do not fall to their trap!"

They crowded over to protect the several carriages. "Let's stay

calm and steady. As long as we keep the carriages safe, we are successful!"

The middle-aged man looked at his experienced fellows. He felt so sad but didn't have a way to vent it.

The real valuable thing had been hidden in that flagpole and it was now gone. Things in the four carriages were useless compared to that ginseng. [Ten times of these things are not enough for me to make a compensation... I am so f*cked up this time...]

...

In the forest, Ning Biluo grabbed that Blood Dragon Ginseng and put it in his mouth. He chewed and then simply swallowed it. The next moment, he started to operate his martial art to digest that ginseng.

The way he ate that ginseng was a bit wasteful, but it was a special time. He didn't have time to gather enough materials or to do something on that ginseng slowly and gradually. What he wanted was to absorb that ginseng as soon as possible!

"The martial world in the Qing-Yun Realm is not too much different from the Land of Han-Yang. However, one thing is totally different... Cultivator's cultivation levels... Well, I guess I still have the chance to achieve something in this world!

"The only thing I should do now is to improve my cultivation capability as much as I can and wait for the reunion with Ye Xiao and the others..."

He then took a deep breath and exhaled out a mass of qi. The next moment, he disappeared into the forest.

That Blood Dragon Ginseng brought him two hundred years of cultivation improvement!

This was the thirtieth time that he was hunted since he arrived in this world!

He had no choice. He was new to this world. He knew nobody. He had no resources at all!

He didn't even know the common sense in this world either.

What he had were those materials Ye Xiao had given to him before they ascended. He had to steal or rob other materials on his own!

That was a tough way to go!

Ning Biluo believed Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun must be in an even worse situation.

[Even master himself could easily be smashed to death in this horrible world. Nobody could immediately be protected and crowded by a bunch of friendly folks from the first day after ascending to this world!]

...

He was right about one thing, but wrong about the other two.

He was definitely wrong about the Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao actually was so lucky. He ate the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish and got a great improvement in cultivation. Lots of sects started to recruit him and he was forcibly recruited by the Cold Moon Palace. After that, a big crowd had guarded him back to the sect. Many people even died for him.

Ning Biluo was right about Liu Changjun though!

Liu Changjun was in a much worse situation than Ning Biluo. The first thing he had done since he got to this world was to rob a group of people who were from a powerful sect.

Unfortunately, he made it!

What he got was a full carriage of spiritual stones.

That was a big trouble!

That sect was not as powerful as the seven great sects, but it was

already one of the big sects in that place. In that sect, there were two Dream Origin Stage cultivator.

Liu Changjun suddenly became a mouse on the street. Every day, there were people showing up trying to hunt him down. What he had been doing all this time was to fight for survival in those days!

...

Chapter 832: Sky Ice Palace, Jun Yinglian!

That's right. He had robbed a huge amount of spiritual stones, and because of that, he had been hunted everyday. Under such circumstances, his cultivation was improved like a rocket. Everyday, there were more people from that sect who got killed by Liu Changjun.

He was a first class assassin after all!

Even though he was one of the weakest in Qing-Yun Realm, he was still a rather experienced and skillful assassin. That made him a difficult target in this world!

He was such an expert in hiding his own trace.

That sect who had been hunting him had many superior cultivators. The two most powerful ones were Dream Origin Stage cultivators who could kill Liu Changjun with one strike. However, it was just a big sect in a small place. Liu Changjun was much worse in cultivation, but he was definitely much more experienced than any of them.

As time passed by, facing the great danger, Liu Changjun survived everyday!

As long as he didn't fight those two Dream Origin Stage cultivators face to face, he would be safe.

That sect actually became a whip that kept urging Liu Changjun to improve himself!

What it took to make Liu Changjun improve was the sacrifice of their people's lives!

...

The third, Zhao Pingtian, was having a much better life.

Liu Changjun and Ning Biluo were both living alone. However, Zhao Pingtian was not!

He had a great companion, his wife Rou-Er, who was a ghost!

Because of the Soul Gathering Dan, Rou-Er could show herself now. However, she could only show a flurry figure of herself in the air. That's all.

However, Zhao Pingtian was already satisfied!

'Ghost' was always a scary thing in any realm.

In Qing-Yun Realm, Zhao Pingtian was too weak to mess with any real superior cultivators yet. Whenever he was in trouble, it could be solved after Rou-Er showed up in front of some people.

Human beings were afraid of unknown things. Cultivators were no different!

When they saw a ghost, they would sweat and immediately run away because of fear.

With such a great help, Zhao Pingtian was nearly invincible. That made him improve so fast.

Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun, the three assassins had three different stories in the new world, but they all had the same goal. They all wanted to improve themselves, to prepare for the reunion!

The martial arts Ye Xiao gave them were top quality martial arts even in Qing-Yun Realm. As they cultivated longer, they found its extensiveness and profoundness. Each of them was almost lost in the martial arts, enjoying.

Time flew by.

The three of them were all getting more and more doughty, more and more powerful in cultivation...

...

In somewhere else.

Bing Xinyue was walking in a certain place full of snow and ice,

wearing floating white clothes.

It was a cliff in front of her. On the cliff, there were three big words.

'Thousand Zhang Ice'!

That was it. The Thousand Zhang Ice mountain.

The entire mountain was a giant piece of ice!

Inside the giant ice, there was a secret palace.

That was Sky Ice Palace.

In the end of the sky, there was a piece of ice, which was over a thousand zhang tall. Inside that great ice, there was a palace!

Finally, Bing Xinyue saw the palace. In the cloud and fog, shining under the sunlight, the palace was glowing with colorful lights. Bing Xinyue smiled.

"Is that Lady Bing?" a middle-aged woman spoke humbly to her, "I'll report to the Prime Master."

"Thanks." Bing Xinyue appreciated it.

Since Xuan Bing returned with great power, the Misty Cloud Palace shocked the entire world again. Disciples of Misty Cloud Palace had great privilege outside the sect. Nobody dared to mess with them and they could finally raise their heads above all the others.

When Bing Xinyue came to this place in the old days, there would always be some people who were mean to her. People would tease her and make troubles on her.

However, this time, all the way along to the Sky Ice Palace, what happened was only peace and serenity. Even Bing Xinyue was surprised that things would go so peaceful for her. She even had a feeling as if she was not attractive anymore, and nobody would love to tease her!

Hmm. Common problems of women. When people kept teasing them, they would feel bored and offended. When nobody dared to mess with them, they felt lost. Oh, women!

After a while, in the Sky Ice Palace, two world class stunning beauties were sitting opposite to each other.

Bing Xinyue was wearing white clothes, showing a warm and gentle smile on the face. Between her two eyes, she looked a bit upset. The lady who sat opposite to her was wearing plain color clothes. She looked amazingly elegant while sitting there quietly. She made people feel cold and distant.

Her eyes were full of sorrow and grief.

"Sister Jun, you can't forget him, can you?" Bing Xinyue sighed.

"Forget him? How?" Jun Yingliang looked extremely sad. She looked at the tomb outside her bedroom silently. It seemed her heart was already buried in that tomb with the man.

A simple response, two questions, she was asking Bing Xinyue, but also asking herself!

"Yue-Er, you don't understand." Jun Yinglian slightly shook her head and said, "Only those who truly loved and made great sacrifice for true love can know how impossible it is to forget their beloved one."

"Perhaps when I die, I will forget him!" Jun Yinglian looked grieved. "It is the four hundred and eighty-ninth day since he left. Time flies indeed. He has gone for one and half a year... I wonder whether he is bored down there. What a conscienceless man. I wonder whether he regrets about how he treated me when he was alive... It is too late now. He lost the chance... We both do..."

Bing Xinyue looked sad. She murmured, "Never in love... Only those who truly loved and made great sacrifice for true love..."

[I don't understand? Really? I did sacrifice for it! But... Have I ever been loved?]

"My request has been pended by the sect." Jun Yinglian sighed. "But I don't care. One more month, if they still won't give me an official reply, I will leave on own. I will leave a message to tell them I give up the position as the Prime Master. I will carry my sword and get down the mountain! I will vent my grudge with my sword in the martial world!"

"Sister, please don't do that!" Bing Xinyue was scared. "How can you fight the three factions on your own? That is suicide!"

...

Chapter 833: Who Else Knows?

"Ah. I do want to get myself killed though." Jun Yinglian blandly said, "It must be a long way in the world of death. He has gone first. I can't let him be alone for too long. What makes me still alive is that there are lots of things I need to take care of before I die. Now I have done all I have to do. The last thing is to see you again, dear sister. I won't regret. However, I have to leave my fame that resounds after I die. If I can kill more people of those three sects, it will be much better."

She took a deep breath and said, "I can't... I can't let the righteous Xiao Monarch just die without anybody even trying to avenge him..."

"He has died for over one year now. I want the entire world to think of him again. I want everybody to hear the sound of that resounding name in Qing-Yun Realm again!"

Jun Yinglian's eyes stared at the gravestone.

It was a ten meters high, three meters wide gravestone, which was made from Cyan-cloud Purple Jade.

There were several words on it.

'Laughing upon all heroes in the world!'

"Life or death, I will be with you, laughing upon all heroes in the world!" Jun Yinglian spoke word by word in a heavy voice.

What she showed was decisiveness on her face!

Bing Xinyue sighed. She knew that no matter what she said, Jun Yinglian wouldn't change her mind.

Since Xiao Monarch died, Jun Yinglian's heart died with him!

What's left of her was just a body!

A extremely beautiful body!

But how could she let her beloved sister die like that?

"Sister, you said this is the last time we see each other. I want to ask you something. I shouldn't.. but..."

Bing Xinyue tried to change the topic. However, when she thought about what she was going to say, she was upset and troubled... Somehow, she felt falling into the trouble of love.

"What is it? Go ahead. Don't do this. Just say it, or don't mention it!" Jun Yinglian replied with coldness.

She had lost interests in anything else in the world.

No matter how Bing Xinyue tried to arouse Jun Yinglian's interest, Jun Yinglian just kept being indifferent. She sounded calm and even a bit impatient.

Bing Xinyue was hesitating, but eventually said it, "Sister, did you ever tell anybody about our relationship?"

Jun Yinglian blandly smiled. "I know you have a strong self-esteem, so I never told anybody about you and me."

"That's weird." Bing Xinyue frowned. "How did he... know it. He... He knows it. I never told anybody else either. How is it possible."

"I thought nobody else would know about you and me in the world. However, it turns out there is a man who knows it," Bing Xinyue said.

"Who is it?" Jun Yinglian wasn't interested at all. She just casually asked.

"I went to Land of Han-Yang to see my disciple. And I met this man. He cured my disciple..." Bing Xinyue stopped at this point.

Jun Yinglian didn't care. She just casually replied, "Oh really?"

"I hadn't met that man before. When I met him, I introduced myself. I said I am Bing Xinyue." Bing Xinyue said, frowning, "When he heard my name, his reaction was so weird. His heart

started beating faster and he looked pale all of a sudden. I noticed he was shaking. So I asked him one thing."

"I asked him why would he have such a weird reaction when he heard my name." She continued, "Because that was the Land of Han-Yang. Nobody knows my name in that world."

Jun Yinglian nodded. "That's true. What did he say then?"

Bing Xinyue said, "He just told me that he had heard of my name before."

Jun Yinglian frowned. "There is a tunnel connecting the Qing-Yun Realm and Land of Han-Yang. Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect both had their branches down there... Maybe it is reasonable that somebody has heard about you."

"That's true. I thought so. I asked him where did he hear my name from. If he heard of my name from those sects, it was normal. But what he said was stunning to me."

"What did he say?"

"He looked so weird and he said... The Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue..." Bing Xinyue spoke word by word.

Jun Yinglian spoke blandly, "That's right. He remembers your name because of this... Wait! No!"

The next moment, Jun Yinglian suddenly stood up. The desk was suddenly put down on the floor. The tea flowed over to the ground. She didn't even notice it. "No! That is not right!"

Bing Xinyue was having a strong heart beat now. She said, "You don't think it is right, do you, sister?"

"Did he say Misty Cloud Palace Bing Xinyue, or The Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue?" Jun Yinglian's face turned pale. She stared at Bing Xinyue and asked, "That sounds like a small difference, but..."

"The Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue! I am sure! That is why I was so surprised!" Bing Xinyue said, "So I replied with the next line, 'The

Broad Heaven Jun Yinglian'!"

"What then?" Jun Yinglian was getting dramatic!

"Then he said he didn't know you... He said he had only heard of the first line..." Bing Xinyue didn't look at Jun Yinglian.

"He was lying!" Jun Yinglian shouted with a deep voice. Her eyes looked fierce. "He lied! The Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue! Only you and me know about this!"

Bing Xinyue asked, "Nobody else knew it?"

Jun Yinglian shouted, "Of course not..."

Suddenly, she stopped.

She slowly turned her head to look at the tombstone in the yard.

The words on that tombstone was shining!

"I know that poem. I still remember it." Bing Xinyue slowly said, "The Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue; the Broad Heaven Jun Yinglian; the Chaos Creator Xiao Monarch; who asks how hard to reach the heavens!"

Jun Yinglian suddenly sat down on the chair, as if her bones were all gone. She was just slouching on the chair.

...

Chapter 834: Go out with the Sword in Hand!

"The Misty Cloud... It only represents one person." After a while, Jun Yinglian said, as if she had just woken up from a bad dream, "The first two lines of the poem... He wrote it... It was only slightly different from Misty Cloud Palace..."

She looked at that tombstone infatuatedly.

"Misty Cloud Palace overwhelms the world. Everybody knows the name. You are from Misty Cloud Palace. Everybody knows it! Nobody would make that mistake!"

"How did he know it? How?" Jun Yinglian grabbed on the chair. Her fingers turned pale! Her breath was getting heavier.

"What is that man's name?" she asked.

"He called himself Feng Zhiling..." Bing Xinyue answered.

"Feng Zhiling?" Jun Yinglian murmured.

Bing Xinyue looked at her and said in a soft voice, "That must be his fake name. My disciple came back to the sect and told me... that Feng Zhiling is actually another person. He is the son of Ye Nantian. Ye Nantian is the Northern General of the Kingdom of Chen in the Land of Han-Yang! Feng Zhiling is actually a young lord."

"Son of Ye Nantian..." Jun Yinglian murmured, "Who is that?"

Bing Xinyue spoke slowly, "It must be a coincidence. That young lord's name... is... Ye... Ye Xiao!"

"Ye the leaf; Xiao the smile!" Bing Xinyue spoke fast. "The three foppish young lords in Kingdom of Chen. They call him Lord Xiao in Capital."

Jun Yinglian heard that and suddenly passed out!

After a while, she woke up under Bing Xinyue's good treatment. She looked blank and said, "What... What did you say just now? What is that young man's name? Who... I didn't hear it clearly. Can you say it again? Can you?"

Bing Xinyue shook her head. She felt helpless about it. However, she still started over to tell her everything again.

Jun Yinglian kept listening to her carefully.

"This Lord Ye, what kind of person is he?" Jun Yinglian asked.

"I... I have no idea. I heard that he is a useless young foppish lord. He is well known as the three foolish young lords in the city. I guess..." Bing Xinyue answered frankly.

Apparently, she knew what Jun Yinglian would do next, so she decided to just tell her the superficial image of Ye Xiao.

However, Bing Xinyue didn't realize that it made her feel so relaxed. Did she really do it just for Jun Yinglian's sake?

Jun Yinglian tried so hard to control her own breath. Her eyes were blinking. She said, "I have to get down there to check on this. I must make sure of everything..."

"But the connection is cut off right now. Nobody can get down there," Bing Xinyue said.

"Hmm..." Jun Yinglian was sad.

"Don't be frustrated though. That young lord Ye Xiao has broken through the tunnel and ascended to Qing-Yun Realm right before the connection was off." Bing Xinyue said, "But nobody knows where he is right now..."

Jun Yinglian's eyes lit up. "You said he is a useless young lord. How could he possibly ascend to this world on his teens?"

Bing Xinyue smiled bitterly. "Maybe he faked a useless lord."

Jun Yinglian took a deep breath and calmed down. "I have to meet this Ye Xiao face to face!"

"Hmm. I understand. But... What you think is impossible." Bing Xinyue hesitated but finally said it.

"I know." Jung Yinglian said, "I know what you mean but I have to see him. I know what I hope is never going to happen. But I have to check on it!"

"Yue, you gave me a dream now. I have to follow it."

"I will only go see him, the young man with the name."

Jung Yinglian said, "But I need to ask you one thing."

Bing Xinyue said, "What is it?"

Jun Yinglian said, "Is his name really Ye Xiao? Ye the leaf; Xiao the smile? You are not making up a story to make me feel happy, are you?"

Bing Xinyue raised her hand and spoke solemnly, "If I ever lied about this, I would love to suffer the divine punishment!"

Jun Yinglian nodded.

She stood up and walked to that tombstone slowly. She stood there and slightly raised her head, looking at the words on the tombstone. She hadn't spoken a word for a while, just staring at it.

Sudden, her eyes became soft.

"Somebody uses your name. Will you allow it?" Jun Yinglian spoke in a low voice. She touched the words and said, "I won't."

Bing Xinyue just stood behind her, staring at her quietly.

The sunset shined on her. The tombstone was shining in colorful lights. At this moment, Jun Yinglian's body seemed to be a part of the tomb.

She looked so isolate and silent.

Bing Xinyue looked at her. She didn't find anything special, but in fact, tears were in her eyes.

She wonder how deep was Jun Yinglian's love to make her look

so piteous!

...

Bing Xinyue left Sky Ice Palace.

When she left, Jun Yinglian didn't walk her away. She just watched her off from the top of the mountain.

However, in her eyes, it could be told that she wasn't actually watching Bing Xinyue off. She was watching in distance, lost in thoughts. She had actually fallen into such deep thoughts before Bing Xinyue left.

Bing Xinyue walked along the way directly to the foot of the mountain. She looked back to the top of the mountain and saw that slim figure was still standing up there.

She knew that the figure wasn't looking at her.

She knew that the figure wasn't looking at anything in the world.

[If only Xiao Monarch is back to life... Sister should be so happy...] Bing Xinyue suddenly felt sour in the heart and came up with such a ridiculous idea.

...

On the third day after Bing Xinyue left Sky Ice Palace.

Jun Yinglian was wearing white clothes from head to toe with a silk mask on her face. She gently walked out of Sky Ice Palace. Finally, she was back to the martial world.

She looked calm and silent.

White clothes. Space ring. Long sword. Silk mask.

She looked just like the day when she first came out to the martial world.

Casual and elegant.

However, the coldness in her eyes and the darkness of death in her eyes, those made people feel that something serious was going

to happen.

When Jun Yinglian left the Thousand Zhang Ice, some carrier birds rushed up high to the sky and flew fast away beyond the clouds.

A lot of people in the Qing-Yun Realm knew about the love story between Jun Yinglian and Xiao Monarch.

Ye Xiao had died for over a year. Jun Yinglian hadn't done anything since then. Everybody knew it was abnormal. Now, Jun Yinglian was eventually out with her sword in her hand, marching ahead to the martial world.

How could those people not be alerted?

...

Chapter 835: The Return of Nantian!

Especially the three factions, they didn't even call back their men around Sky Ice Palace even though they had to close their gates. They wanted to know about what Jun Yinglian was going to do.

In fact, Sky Ice Palace was not one of the most powerful sects in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Jun Yinglian, however, was one of the most powerful figures in the Qing-Yun Realm!

At least among the ladies, except Xuan Bing, Xue Danru and other old generation cultivators, she should be the best!

The carrier birds didn't bother Jun Yinglian. She just looked at them and then left the place quickly.

...

"Jun Yinglian left the mountain?" Yue Changtian heard the news. He didn't even have time to discuss his lost fish now. He called up an important meeting for the news. "She alone? Left the mountain with a silk mask on the face, a sword in her hand?"

When he made sure it was true, Yue Changtian made a long sigh.

"A chaos is going to hit Qing-Yun Realm soon."

...

"Chaos!"

"Last time, it was the Chaos Creator Xiao Monarch! This time, it is the Broad Heavens Jun Yinglian."

"Who hosts the thousand Zhang great mountain, the beauty of the heavens Jun Yinglian!"

"A storm is coming!"

"Unless Jun Yinglian died herself... Otherwise, she is never going to let us go."

The leaders of the three factions all had the same reaction to the news!

"What to do?"

"What to do?"

"What to do?"

...

In fact, even if Jun Yinglian didn't return to the martial world, there were several hidden disturbances rising up in the martial world.

The seven great sects closed the gates at the same time for three years.

That had never happened before.

Some sects in the martial world got the opportunity to grow bigger!

The seven sects closed their gates. The three palaces and two halls closed their gates too. That was the most fortunate thing for other forces in Qing-Yun Realm.

It was such a great opportunity for the other sects to get great improvement!

Before this, the most powerful forces had been suppressing the entire martial world. The other sects could only live beneath their arrogance.

Cloud Breach Sect, which was announced to be the first sect in the world, had been suppressed all the time. They had given up so many resources that they had won during battles. They gave up a lot, so that they could keep themselves safe from the attention of the great forces.

If Cloud Breach Sect fought against any one of the seven great sects, they would totally collapse.

This time, Cloud Breach Sect could expand their territory as much as they wanted.

Three years was more than enough for them to snatch a huge amount of resources in the world. After three years, they would establish a great foundation of their own!

The seven sects closed their gates. All martial forces in Qing-Yun Realm were thrilled.

Nobody knew why Xuan Bing would sweep over all those super powerful forces! If she attacked them only to vent the grudge in her chest, she didn't have to make them close the gates for three years.

She could just beat them up harder.

Why would she make them close the gates?

It was totally a redundant move!

That didn't make sense at all.

However, it wasn't important to know why Xuan Bing did that. For the other sects, they only needed to know the great sects had closed the gates. All the disciples of those super powerful sects had returned to their sects and wouldn't come out.

In Misty Cloud Palace.

In the misty clouds, Xuan Bing was wearing all black, standing on top of the mountain and looking in distance. She looked so cold on the face, like an ice sculpture.

In fact, she looked pale on the face.

She had threatened all those super powerful sects on her own. Even if she was made from iron steel, she would still get hurt.

Behind her, a few elders stood there humbly down at the foot of the mountain.

They were here to ask about what to do next.

They felt rather excited about what the Prime Elder had done but also confused. [Why would Prime Elder do it so recklessly?]

[She has actually offended all those powerful sects in one move!]

Xuan Bing gave a few orders to them and then became like an ice sculpture again.

The elders took a breath of relief and then left.

When they were leaving, they seemed to hear Prime Elder Xuan Bing say something.

It was in a low voice, but they all heard it.

"Qing-Yun Realm should be much safer since all those sects have hidden back behind their gates..."

She seemed to say more than this, but nobody heard it after that.

A piece of cloud flew over and covered her slim figure. Nobody could see her now.

The elders were confused. [Safer? What does that mean? Prime Elder thinks Qing-Yun Realm is unsafe?]

[She is such a powerful cultivator. Nowhere except the four Saint Areas could possibly make her feel unsafe!]

However, nobody dared to ask her about it. They just left with the questions in mind.

...

Other than the sects in the martial world, all the noble clans were all celebrating this too.

Especially... Ye Clan!

Ye Clan had been pushed down to the bottom for a long time in the Qing-Yun Realm. Because of the suppression from Qiong-Hua Palace, no other forces dared to get close with Ye Clan.

Ye Clan was like totally banned.

However, for the next three years, Ye Clan was free from the suppression.

Three years was long enough for them to do so many things.

However, the only thing that annoyed everybody in Ye Clan was that the man who made the entire clan under Qiong-Hua Palace's suppression had returned to the world. That was such an annoying thing for all the others!

Ye Nantian returned!

The return of Ye Nantian aroused a complex emotion in every clan member's heart.

When he entered the door of Ye Clan, all the members were silent.

"Why did you come back?" This was the first thing the old leader said to his son. He stared at Ye Nantian. He couldn't believe it.

"Why can't I come back. This is my home. Am I not a member of Ye Clan?" Facing his own father, Ye Nantian didn't show any weakness. He spoke word by word decisively, "I have been living in the lower realm for seventeen years. The tunnel is sealed. Of course, I should come back. Do you think I should just die under that divine lightning strikes? Even after all these years, you still don't want me to come back, do you?"

Ye Nantian sounded tough, but hidden inside his words, there were sorrow and grievances.

...

Chapter 836: My Improvement Has Been Limited

The old Ye looked anxious. "The tunnel is blocked. There is no other choice left to you. You surely could come back to Qing-Yun Realm, but you shouldn't show up in Ye Clan like this. Don't you know that we have been suppressed for seventeen years just because of you..."

Ye Nantian spoke blandly, "Didn't I pay my own debt for the old days? I was twenty-three! Now I am forty!"

"The best ages of my life were wasted just because of that thing." He seemed to be in pain. "I understand what a clan means. If my clan doesn't allow me to stay, I will just leave. The world is big enough for me to find a shelter!"

"I came back today because I want to see you and mother. I wasn't a good son. I just want to see this place, where I grew up. I will kowtow to the ancestors, tell them I am back. The last thing, I would love to tell the world that I am back. Ye Nantian returned."

He took a deep breath and said, "Now, all I want is your answer. Should I go or stay?"

The old Ye closed his eyes.

He realized that his little son had really grown up.

It was not the young Ye Nantian who made a huge trouble and got kicked out of the family like a wild dog.

His vigor, power, and qi were all improved to a decent level.

Even when he was facing his own father, he looked casual and confident. However, he didn't feel close to his father now.

He talked like he still wanted to return to the clan, but the old Ye knew that he wouldn't be surprised to get expelled again.

He wouldn't be sad.

He had been hurt once, so he wouldn't feel sad again.

The old Ye felt sad about it, but also pleased that his son had finally grown up!

"I know. Our clan hurt you. You must understand that there are no other options left to us. You saw it yourself. If we didn't expel you, Ye Clan would be destroyed. Ye Clan doesn't belong to anybody. Ye Clan belongs to every member of the clan. We can't let it be ruined because of you."

The old Ye thought for a while and said, "Look. I just can't make the decision on my own. It should be discussed by the elders."

He spoke in a deep voice, "Go to the inner house. Go see your mother... She has nearly blinded her eyes because of all the tears she shed all these years. It must be such a relief and happiness for her to see you again..."

Ye Nantian's eyes turned red. Suddenly, he didn't feel the grievances anymore. Nothing was important now. All those feelings were gone because of his mother's sorrow.

'She has nearly blinded her eyes because of all the tears she shed...'

"I will wait for the clan's decision." Ye Nantian left a word and then walked fast to the inner house.

It seemed he didn't want to stay there any longer.

The Great General Ye, who had conquered the entire world in the Land of Han-Yang, was now extremely soft in the heart.

He was a tough man, and he tried to act indifferent, but deep inside his heart, he was afraid that he would be expelled again by his own clan!

However, he had to wait for the decision, like a prisoner waiting for the sentence. He would eventually get the answer, whether to

stay or to leave!

He could only wait. There was nothing else he could do.

He felt lucky about one thing... [What a smart decision not to take Xiao Xiao back here!]

[Xiao Xiao is a tough man. He can create his own bright future by himself. In fact, even if he would starve to death out there, he wouldn't stay here to endure the grievances!]

Ye Xiao had never lived in a family before. He knew nothing about any rules in the clan. Ye Nantian had been away from home for nearly twenty years, but he was still deeply bonded to the family. No matter what happened, the clan was always important to him. The connection between him and the clan might be positive, also negative!

"Nantian, what level are you at now?" When Ye Nantian was about to leave, the old Ye asked. He didn't expect any good news about it though.

When Ye Nantian was twenty-three, he was already level six of Dream Origin Stage. That was shockingly high. He should be a brilliant cultivation genius no matter whether in the Ye Clan or in the entire Qing-Yun Realm. There was a great future ahead of him.

However, when he was most glorious, he met Yue Gongxue.

Because of her, he was beaten so hard and got weakened to level three. There was a hidden injury left inside him since then. After that, he was expelled from the clan!

The old Ye asked about it casually.

In fact, he wished he didn't.

Life was already miserable enough for Ye Nantian. The old Ye thought that his son must be weakened much more. He thought that he shouldn't have asked about it again, because it would hurt Ye Nantian once more.

A man who had been weakened and suffered an incurable injury, how good could he be in cultivation?

It was obviously hitting his sore spots!

It was done by a father to his son!

Ye Nantian stopped and blandly said, "My improvement is restrained because there have been too many things to take care of. I am now at level eight of Dream Origin Stage!"

The old Ye smiled and said, "Oh really. Not bad!" And then he suddenly opened his eyes wide. "What? What did you say? What did you just say?"

Apparently, he didn't really pay attention to what Ye Nantian would say at the beginning. All he thought was not to hurt his son's feeling. No matter what Ye Nantian said, he would say 'not bad'. However, when he realized what Ye Nantian actually said, he was astonished! He couldn't believe it!

[How is it possible?]

"My improvement has been limited. I am only at level eight of Dream Origin Stage. That's it!" Ye Nantian tried to be calm and peaceful.

He knew why his father was shocked.

Basically, it was shocking enough that he didn't become weaker than level three of Dream Origin Stage after all those years. It was already a miracle that he remained at the same level.

After all, Ye Nantian had been staying in a lower realm that was extremely poor.

Besides, he was suffering an incurable injury!

In others' eyes, not to mention cultivation improvement, it was impossible for him to live healthily. In fact, it was surprising enough that he didn't die.

However, unexpectedly, he wasn't weaker at all. He was totally

cured and became stronger after that!

He had taken a stride up in cultivation and reached level eight of Dream Origin Stage!

...

Chapter 837: Clan Dispute!

It was difficult to improve from level six to level eight of Dream Origin Stage within less than twenty years. Ye Nantian reached level eight from level three, in a world that was extremely poor and with an unhealthy condition.

That was a miracle!

However, when Ye Nantian thought of this, he thought of his dear son.

His son was his biggest pride in his life!

It was his son who cured his hidden wound. When he was in that poor world, it was his son who gave him a martial art to improve him!

He was sure that as long as he kept cultivating himself with that martial art, he would reach Dao Origin Stage within two years!

The old Ye was completely shocked. [Level eight of Dream Origin Stage!]

[How is that possible!]

His son, who was recognized as useless, actually brought back such a shocking news!

"Your wounds? Cured?" The old Ye asked, "The medicines I gave you, it worked?"

Hearing that, Ye Nantian felt the warmth in his heart.

[The medicines... It turns out my father kept sending me medicines...]

Every year in the Land of Han-Yang, he would receive two batches of materials. One was from his mother. She must have worked so hard to gather the materials for him. He didn't know, but he did now, that the other batch was from his cold and cruel father.

[I guess father doesn't know the truth that mother has been sending me materials too... If he knows, he should say 'the medicines we gave you'...]

[He would say we, instead of I!]

"Yes, they did!" Ye Nantian sounded gentler. He nearly burst in tears at this moment.

[I thought there was no love between us, but it has always been here.]

[I was not an abandoned child!]

He couldn't tell them things about his son. He didn't want to tell the old man that all he had done was wasted, so he told the old man the medicines were useful. He just didn't want to hurt the old man's feeling.

The old Ye rubbed his beard like he usually did. However, he was so thrilled that he rubbed off a few strands. He was so happy. "That is great! Now you are fully recovered! You are even much stronger than the past! Now I have a bigger chance to convince the elders to keep you in the family!"

Ye Nantian only felt tears in the eyes. He turned around and entered the inner house.

[Mother, your son has returned!]

...

The oldest young lord, who had been expelled from the clan, returned from the lower realm!

The man who had made a great trouble for his clan was back.

Ye Nantian, the first cultivation genius in Ye Clan, was back.

It spread inside the Ye Clan and shocked every member.

In the Qing-Yun Realm, there were four main regions in east, south, north and west. Every region had eight areas around. Ye

Clan was located in the north region.

There was an area in the south of the north region, which was divided into three districts.

Saint Downfall District, Saint Oracle District, and Saint Extension District.

Ye Clan was located in Saint Oracle District.

There were three super clans, which were the three most powerful ones in Saint Oracle District. Below them there were eight great clans, which were in charge of eight different places. Below the great clans, there were lots of big and small clans.

Ye Clan was just an average clan, not too big, not too small. When Ye Xiao first met Ye Nantian in the Land of Han-Yang, he had bragged that Ye Clan was among the top clans in the Qing-Yun Realm. He had to say that, so as to intimidate the man in front of him. However, he didn't know that the man was exactly his father. Ye Nantian knew everything about his own clan. Ye Clan was too far away from being a top clan in the Qing-Yun Realm!

It was like heaven and earth.

If Ye Clan was a top clan in the world, he wouldn't have to suffer that misery in the old days!

Because of what happened on Ye Nantian, Ye Clan suddenly stopped improving! Ye Clan had the chance to grow bigger and become a great clan. If they successfully seized the chance, there would be nine great clans in Saint Oracle District, instead of eight. However, it became impossible after what happened. Ye Clan nearly became a small clan.

Because of that, everybody in the clan felt angry and hateful to Ye Nantian, the cultivation genius in the clan.

He ruined the hope of all generations of the clan and the work of the clan members when they were so close to success!

"Heaven and earth! Rain and win! Land and air! Two lines should sometimes match together. And we are talking about marriage!"

"That's right! He should know better about himself. A toad lusting after a swan's flesh. He hurt both the girl and himself. He even put the entire clan into danger..."

"He should really learn how small he is to covetously dream about marrying the girl from Qiong-Hua Palace. Does he match?"

"He deserves that torture!"

"He deserves it, but he should have never dragged the entire clan down with him!"

"Such an animal! Why should we still keep him in the clan?"

...

People kept saying similar things like these.

Now, Ye Nantian was back.

Ye Clan was once again in chaos.

"He's recovered? So what? I won't allow him to stay!" An elder stood up. "What if Qiong-Hua Palace finds out? What if they get mad at us again? Ye Clan could be totally destroyed!"

"That's true. I vote no." Another elder spoke slowly, "Ye Nantian was a bad luck to us. Ye Clan has finally lived in peace for the recent years. Now we are going to embrace a new era of our sect. He comes back with even stronger power, but so what? If Qiong-Hua Palace knows it and comes for trouble, could he handle it? What will happen is no different than what happened in the past. In fact, Qiong-Hua Palace might get even more furious this time..."

There were people objecting it, but there were also people approving it. "I don't think it is such a big problem to let him stay. He was wrong back then and he nearly ruined the entire clan. However, he was too young. Now he is back from his punishment."

"That's right. Not to mention Ye Nantian, who among us hasn't

been through the days of ignorant youth?"

...

Chapter 838: Stay!

"Besides, staying away far from home for seventeen years, that is enough punishment. We don't have to push him too hard. We are all named Ye after all. Why do we have to hurt our own kin?"

"In fact, except that one particular thing, Nantian has never failed us. He used to be the hope of our clan. We are all old aged now. We all saw him grow up. Why not just give the younger generation a chance? Give him a chance. Maybe it is also our clan's opportunity!"

"That's true. What we don't want to see is Qiong-Hua Palace's anger. Now Qiong-Hua Palace is going to be closed for three years. Nobody knows when will it open again. Nantian is greatly improved now. He is not just an ordinary cultivator. He may do great contribution to the clan. I say it is heaven's will to send Nantian back while Qiong-Hua Palace is closed. It must be heaven's will that Ye Clan will rise again!"

...

"I won't change my mind! No matter what you say, my answer is no!" The third elder humphed and said, "Such a black sheep will only bring harm to our clan. We can't let him stay!"

Another elder humphed, "What are you actually so afraid of? Even if Ye Nantian stays, he won't become the inheritor again. He won't be a threat to your man. Why can't you just give him a chance..."

Third elder raged up. "What the hell do you mean by that? What threat?"

They were about to get on a fight.

The oldest elder hadn't said anything yet. His hairs were all grey. Now he started to speak, "I think..."

He was the main force that had led the entire Ye Clan to rush up

and become a middle ranged clan in the old days. He was a rather important figure in the clan. Everybody respected him no matter what happened. As he started to speak, nobody else dared to say a word.

They were all listening to him.

"I think since the kid has returned, we can't just turn him away. That is too cruel and coldblooded... Let him stay." He spoke slowly, "But one thing must be clear. He will never return to the position he used to be. He will only be a normal disciple in the clan. He has lost his chance to be the inheritor of the clan."

Nobody said no after that.

"Since Prime Elder said so, I believe this must be a well-considered idea. I agree. I agree with Prime Elder's opinion." Third elder immediately changed his mind.

The others felt relieved. Somebody said, "Prime Elder is always the profound and sober one. I say it is right to focus on maintaining the unity of the clan. Just let him stay. He is a Ye after all. Let him come back home."

Those who strongly objected suddenly changed their minds after Prime Elder spoke.

Prime Elder made the final decision on his own!

The old Ye, who was the host of the clan, sighed.

He knew that those people didn't change their mind to just show respect to the Prime Elder. In fact, they changed their mind because of what the Prime Elder said.

'He will never return to the position he used to be. He will only be a normal disciple in the clan. He has lost his chance to be the inheritor of the clan.'

That meant Ye Nantian would never become the leader of the clan. That meant he wouldn't become a strong competitor to those

men's people. They wouldn't care if Ye Nantian stayed in the clan.

Besides, the clan had one more superior cultivator...

"Patriarch mentioned that Nantian is fully recovered, even improved. May I ask in what stage he is?" The Prime Elder looked at the elders around and then asked the old Ye, patriarch of the clan.

"Nantian is now at level eight of Dream Origin Stage." Patriarch Ye, Ye Shuqing, felt that something was stuck in his throat.

His voice was hoarse, not because he had to tell others about his son's cultivation level, but because he was so excited and proud about it. He was so happy that his son finally got to stay in the clan. He couldn't pass the position to his son, but he could finally spend the rest of his life with his son.

However, he also felt chilled in the heart.

[Nantian can stay now, not because he is son of Ye, not because he is a great cultivator, but because he is no more a threat to the others. He has lost his chance to compete for the inheritance...]

[Since when did our people begin to be controlled by the thirst for power and profit?]

[Isn't this a tragedy?]

However, the next moment.

Whoever heard what Ye Shuqing said were all stunned.

"Level eight of Dream Origin Stage?" Even the Prime Elder was shocked. He couldn't believe it.

[Ye Nantian? Level eight of Dream Origin Stage?]

[How is that possible?]

Ye Shuqing had told them that Ye Nantian wasn't weaker, instead he was improved. However, the others thought he was trying to make his son sound better.

When Ye Nantian was expelled, he was level three of Dream Origin Stage. Superior cultivators in the clan had secretly investigated Ye Nantian and found out he was suffering incurable wounds. That injury would even make him weaker and weaker. In other words, Ye Nantian could never improve himself. That was why the elders all considered it was not worth it to let him stay in the clan. Besides, nobody wanted to mess with Qiong-Hua Palace!

Ye Shuqing said that Ye Nantian was recovered. They thought maybe he was lucky enough to cure the injury and become level three of Dream Origin Stage. That was the best—it was nearly a miracle to them!

However, unexpectedly, Ye Nantian was not only recovered but he was also greatly improved! He was now level eight of Dream Origin Stage!

He was not just stuck at going back to level six! He was two great steps up... level eight of Dream Origin Stage!

It was too much of a vague concept to just say that he has improved a bit!

How many people in the Ye Clan had already reached level eight of Dream Origin Stage?

It was easy to reach Dream Origin Stage for people in the seven great sects, three palaces and two halls. However, for the other sects and most of the clans, it was significant!

There was a huge difficulty after every three levels in Dream Origin Stage. Ninety-nine percent of cultivators would forever stop at level six.

Ye Nantian had been seriously injured and staying in a poor realm, the Land of Han-Yang. However, he was recovered and even improved himself to break through level six!

He actually reached level eight!

There was only one Dao Origin Stage cultivator in Ye Clan. That

was the Prime Elder, and that was why everybody respected him so much. Also, he was the reason why Ye Clan could keep trying to rise up to become one of the great clans.

...

Chapter 839: Who Is the Murderer?

Every great clan must have one Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

The Prime Elder was the only Dao Origin Stage cultivator of Ye Clan. Below him, there were several elders who were in level nine of Dream Origin Stage. Who came next were those in the middle levels of Dream Origin Stage!

It was rather difficult to break through to a upper level!

Patriarch Ye, Ye Shuqing, had reach the middle phase of level nine of Dream Origin Stage ten years earlier. Since then, he had been staying in the same stage without any improvement at all.

In the Ye Clan, there were no more than ten people who had reached level six of Dream Origin Stage!

No more than one hundred people were in Dream Origin Stage!

However, there were over ten thousand people in the Ye Clan!

Every year, the clan would trade for cultivation materials with the money they made in the year to help the younger generation cultivate themselves. However, even though these people were all supported by the clan, they were even doing worse than Ye Nantian, who had been living and cultivating in a poor lower realm!

"Did he eat anything from the gods?" The third elder widely opened his eyes. He just couldn't accept the truth. He looked hilarious though.

However, nobody laughed, because the others all couldn't believe it either!

The meeting room of the clan was suddenly silent.

...

After the meeting, Ye Nantian could finally stay in the clan.

He was even assigned to a special position.

'Martial Art Cultivation Chief Master of Ye Clan'!

It sounded imposing and cool, but had no real power at all. To put it frankly, that meant... he had great cultivation that the clan would not waste.

Since he was so talented in cultivation and got him self improved greatly in that poor lower realm, he should just teach whatever was useful to the younger people in the clan.

His duty was to teach people in the clan to cultivate themselves.

That was his only job!

When the clan needed to have a discussion about something important, it wouldn't need Ye Nantian to join the meeting... When there were enemies to fight, he would need to go fight it.

All in all, he must do whatever the clan needed him to do and stayed away from whatever the clan didn't want him to know. What he could have was a place to live in and the title as a member of the Ye Clan!

In fact, Ye Nantian didn't really care about it.

He just wanted to stay in the clan so as to take care of his mother.

He could also have lots of spare time to cultivate martial art. That was a good arrangement for him.

Power and position in the clan, he really didn't want it. He didn't really care about it. All those years in the Land of Han-Yang, he was one of the most powerful figures. He even sat in equal seats with the king. Why would he still chase after the vain fame?

Power in the clan was the last thing he was interested in. He could never be the inheritor of the clan. That was true.

In fact, if the elders begged him to be the inheritor, he would probably turn it down. He really wasn't interested in that! He would never let himself become the patriarch of the clan!

What he wanted to do was to take good care of his parents and improve his own cultivation capability. When he was strong enough, he would go bring his wife and his son back.

That was all he wanted. It was just that simple.

When he finally could live with his wife and son, he wouldn't mind leaving the Ye Clan!

That night, after being apart for over a dozen years, Ye Shuqing was so happy to have his son back and to have a dinner with a whole family.

He asked people to prepare a big feast to celebrate his son's return.

The three of them sat around the table. Even old Lady Ye, who hadn't drunk liquor for years, actually drank several cups. She just couldn't stop smiling.

When Ye Nantian sat down, he finally remembered something important. "Finally, I can have a proper meal with my parents. However, where is my brother?"

Suddenly, the old couple's faces turned dark.

"He... Oh... The second year after you left, your younger brother was killed in Hatred Valley. His head was cut off!" The old lady wept.

Ye Nantian was stunned!

All those years, he had thought that his brother would take care of their parents.

That was why he felt relieved about it. His brother was an honest man. He would definitely take good care of their parents.

Even if Ye Nantian never came back home, his brother would settle everything. He should be relieved about it.

However, unexpectedly, his brother actually died one year after he left the Qing-Yun Realm!

[Why... Why would that happen?]

[How did my parents survive all these years of grievance?]

[That must be utterly painful for both of them!]

[I truly haven't been a good son. I have been really useless and ridiculous!]

Ye Nantian's hand started to shake. His eyes suddenly turned red. Tears dropped down from his eyes. He still remember that day when people from Qiong-Hua Palace came, his brother stepped in front of him and shouted to those men, "I am Ye Nantian! Come fight me!"

"Whoever dares to touch my brother should better step over my body!" His younger brother was shouting!

He didn't step back facing countless Dao Origin Stage cultivators. This young man was full of passion. In his heart, he respected and loved his older brother!

He wouldn't let anybody hurt his brother!

Ye Nantian sobbed with tears rushing out his eyes.

He hadn't thought of the memory for a long time. [Am I such a coldblooded person?]

"Brother..." Deep as he thought, he felt sad. Finally, he burst in tears.

"How exactly did he die?" Ye Nantian looked full of hatred, with a pair of red eyes.

"We don't know." Ye Shuqing smiled bitterly. "He was beheaded. His entire body was cut into pieces... I have cultivated ten years and finally reached the middle phase of level nine, but I am still unable to avenge him. Cultivation doesn't help. No matter what I do, I can't find out who is the murderer. I don't know who did that to my dear son. Whoever did that must be vicious and vile. They didn't even leave him a whole body..."

"He was killed the next year after I left. It shouldn't be Qiong-Hua Palace. He was ambushed. That meant the murderer was not so powerful!"

"Who is the murderer?"

Ye Nantian looked at his father and asked, "So after that, the clan inheritor became somebody else, right?"

...

Chapter 840: Where Is Your Son?

Ye Shuqing's face turned pale. He murmured, "You mean..."

"I didn't say anything!" Ye Nantian blandly said, "Blood for blood!"

"I will avenge my brother!" His eyebrows rose up. "No matter who killed my brother, I will never let it go!"

"Whoever he is, he will pay for the price!"

He spoke again word by word.

...

The old lady was eventually drunk, because of the liquor, also because of the grievance.

The poor old lady, one of her sons was seriously wounded and expelled, the other died. She had been suffering for seventeen years. Now that one of her sons returned to her, she could finally enjoy the days with him.

She still felt sad about it. She still missed the departed younger son so much. However, she was comforted to a certain extent.

Father and son together, held the old lady to the bed, and then the two of them went to the study room.

Ye Nantian and his father had a conversation till midnight.

At the end, Ye Shuqing finally said something he wanted to say. He hadn't said it because he didn't want his son to feel hurt.

"The clan leadership wouldn't let you participate the clan affairs. I think that may be a better thing for you," he said.

Unexpectedly, Ye Nantian just nodded without saying anything.

"Nantian, what is your plan?" He asked Ye Nantian.

He thought his son's reaction was so quick. Ye Nantian was just over forty years old but was already at level eight of Dream Origin

Stage. He was in such a prime age! How could he just stay in a comfortable and useless position!

"Me? Nothing special." Ye Nantian said, "I will cultivate more to improve myself, and I will spend as much time as I can to take good care of you two... Nothing else."

He talked in a peaceful tone. He was calm like a glass of water.

"Well... Don't you have any specific plan?" Ye Shuqing wasn't willing to give up.

"Yes." Ye Nantian raised up his head. His eyes were red with tears. "I will avenge my brother!"

Ye Shuqing was shocked.

It became silent for a while.

"I know you have some clues." Ye Nantian looked at his father. "Father, you are a wise man. Our people all know that. My brother got killed, so there must be something hidden behind it!"

"I guess you know who the murderer is. You just don't want to say it. Why? I understood!" Ye Nantian stared at his father. "I know you have your reason!"

"But I am not you!" he spoke fiercely.

Ye Shuqing made a long sigh and didn't say anything.

"I will start investigating!" Ye Nantian blandly said, "Even... Even if I will get expelled from the clan because of it, even if the entire Ye Clan will fall..."

"I will still seek for revenge!"

There was blood in his eyes.

He spoke word by word in a strong tone. There was the fire of hatred and anger burning in his eyes, also determination!

They both stopped talking.

None of them made any move. Both of them were lost in

thought...

Ye Nantian lowered his head. Two drops of tears flowed down on his cheeks.

After another long silent moment, Ye Shuqing spoke again. He changed the topic tough.

"You mother... she asked me something earlier." He hesitated. In his eyes, there were hope and fever. He cautiously said, "Where is your son?"

Ye Nantian raised up his head.

It was the first time he looked into his father's eyes.

From his father's eyes, he could see the desire from a grandfather to see his grandson. That was the hope of carrying on the family line...

It was all men's beautiful wish to live a happy life with their grandchildren!

Ye Shuqing didn't ask while they were eating, because he didn't want the old lady to feel sad. However, she mentioned it to her husband after the meal.

Every elder wanted a grandson.

Who didn't love kids? Especially their own blood?

"Is he still alive?" Ye Shuqing didn't get a response from Ye Nantian, so he was worried.

He was scared. He was afraid he would get an unacceptable answer.

It was his grandson after all.

His only grandson!

In the old man's heart, he knew it clearly. He had lost the younger son. The older son would never marry other women. He would only marry Yue Gongxue.

That meant... this grandson was very likely the only grandson he was going to have...

"He's alive. He's living quite well." Ye Nantian sighed. "He has a handsome look that's from his mother. He has that kind of pride too."

The old man felt relieved. "Heh, heh. It doesn't matter. A young man should have his pride..."

Then he sighed. "It's a shame that the tunnel has been blocked. Nobody know when will it be opened again. That kid have to stay in the Land of Han-Yang for the rest of his life. In fact, that's good for him. I guess you have taught him your special martial art? He is going to be a dominator in that world for sure. It is better to be the best among the mortals than to be the worst among the elites. We may never see him again, but he is safe. That's good. He should have a happy life down there."

He talked as if it was easy to accept the reality. However, he was obviously disappointed and upset about it!

Ye Nantian shook his head. "Father, you don't need to be so disappointed. He is beyond the limit of the Land of Han-Yang. That realm is too weak for him now. He has ascended to this world."

"What did you say? He actually has... How old is he? Seventeen?" Ye Shuqing's eyes lit up. "How is that possible? He is strong enough to ascend? That means he is another brilliant genius!"

Ye Nantian showed a warm smile. "He is not just a genius. He is the best of the best! He is stronger than the seventeen old me. Much stronger! Much much stronger!"

He emphasized it again and again. In his voice, there was pride and honor!

"Then... why don't you just bring him back to me?" Ye Shuqing was excited.

Ye Nantian said, "He ascended in the natural way. I don't know

where he landed yet. Besides, I wouldn't dare to take him back. He may die here!"

He looked up while staring right into his father's eyes. "I won't! I wouldn't dare!"

It broke the old man down.

Ye Shuqing suddenly fell down and sat on the chair. He couldn't say a word for a long time. His face seemed much older all of a sudden.

...

Chapter 841: His Name Is Ye Xiao!

After a long time, Ye Shuqing started to smile in a bitter way. He said, "That's right. He can't be here. If he is here... he will die..."

"That's right." Ye Nantian said, "Not to mention that he is my son, not to mention the threat from Qiong-Hua Palace, after seventeen years, I don't think this place will accept another super genius..."

"It will be another conflict in the clan. It will be lapse of the same kin. It will be redistribution of power!"

He smiled bitterly. "My brother is dead... If my son came here and show everybody how genius he is, he will die for sure..."

Ye Shuqing's face suddenly turned blue.

He held his hands tight and made two fierce fists!

Ye Nantian said, "I think... Maybe it is better to let him go out and live in the martial world by himself. Maybe it is better to free him from the disturbance of his family name. I made the decision before I knew what happened to my brother. Now I feel lucky that I made it."

"I hope... that he..." Ye Shuqing sighed.

"Don't worry, father. He is a tough man. He is always calm and steady. He will come back to Ye Clan sooner or later. Even if he just passes by, I will drag him in to see you," Ye Nantian said.

"Good." Ye Shuqing's eyes lit up. He said, "I have to see my grandson... My poor kid..."

He sighed as tears fell down from his eyes. He said, "He is still a kid, yet he has to carry such a burden. It must be hard for him..."

Ye Nantian sighed and said, "Don't worry, father. He will be back to the clan in the future. Even though he may not tell others his real name, he is always my son. That won't change!"

"Yes!" Ye Shuqing's became solemn. "No matter what, he is named Ye!"

Then he asked, "What is his name?"

Ye Nantian was a bit embarrassed. He said, "He... His name is... Ye... Ye Xiao!"

"Ye Xiao!" Ye Shuqing was stunned. He suddenly stood up and nearly turned over the chair. "How can you name my grandson with that name? It is a forbidden! You were not in Qing-Yun Realm in those days, but you surely knew what this name means!"

Ye Nantian sighed and said, "I was... totally broken at that time. I was so worried that my son and I would be killed somewhere... I was worried that he would encounter any great danger in the future..."

"That's why I gave him that name, Ye Xiao. The same with Xiao Monarch." Ye Nantian said, "I was thinking that if something happens to him, when he tells his name, maybe people won't take risk to mess with him."

"If people would take a second thought after they learned of his name, he might get a chance to survive."

"I am his father, but I am unable to keep him safe... I have to..." He was in pain. "I have to do whatever may help me."

"I think even if Xiao Monarch knew it, he would just kill me since I gave the kid that name. The kid is innocent. He wouldn't kill an innocent child. Xiao Monarch always showed up alone and he never followed any rules. However, I never heard he would kill innocent people."

"However, unexpectedly... when Xiao Xiao was sixteen, the famous Xiao Monarch... actually died. I guess I never have a chance to pay my price for using his name..." He looked ashamed.

Ye Shuqing was shocked. He didn't know what to say anymore.

However, he also felt ashamed.

He was a patriarch of a clan, yet he couldn't protect his own son and grandson. His son, who was in his toughest days, gave his grandson the most famous name so as to protect the kid, even though he knew he might actually die for it.

It was a powerful protection though. At least in Qing-Yun Realm, everybody knew the name Ye Xiao!

Even though some people didn't know Ye Xiao, they definitely knew Xiao Monarch!

Even deaf and blind knew that figure.

As long as Xiao Monarch didn't know or didn't care, no matter who wanted to kill the kid would have to hesitate.

For instance, it was hard to tell people what they did if they killed the kid.

"I killed Ye Xiao! I did that!"

Who dared to say it?

Nobody dared to piss Xiao Monarch off. That was risking their lives. That was why the name 'Ye Xiao' did protect the kid for some reasons.

"The problem is, Xiao Monarch is dead. No matter how resounding his name is, it is buried in history." Ye Shuqing said, "In fact, this name has become forbidden in this world. If people of the three factions know that there is a young man who is named Ye Xiao too... They would send people to kill him so that they won't have to hear the name again."

"Don't worry, father. I did warn the kid. He would change his name once he come to this world." Ye Nantian smiled bitterly and looked at his father. "In fact, even me, as his father, don't know what name he is using at the moment. I don't know whether he would keep the family name or not."

Ye Shuqing stayed quiet for a while and then said after a long sigh, "This is better. Even you don't know his name. That makes him safer. I mean, you really did take precautions to our clan."

Ye Nantian didn't answer but just smiled bitterly.

[How can I not?]

[I turned myself in. I still remember how I was being frank to the clan. My son is never going to make the same mistake. I won't let him die in the fight among these wolves!]

"I hope the kid will be safe outside," Ye Shuqing said after being lost in thoughts for a while.

He looked dispirited.

Ye Nantian didn't say anything though.

[I don't want you to be famous. I don't want you to be powerful. I don't want you to be rich! I just want you to be... safe and happy! I hope you can live a life without any grievances.]

That was a father's sincere wish to his son!

...

Chapter 842: The God Level Special Training

Ye Nantian officially returned to the clan!

He had settled down in the clan.

Although there would be people looking at him with weird expressions now and then, he didn't care.

[At least I am back!]

[I believe I will reach the height I want someday!]

[I will take all that I lost back!]

[Including my love!]

[My everything!]

[Xue-Er, wait for me!]

[Wait for me and our son!]

[I believe that day is coming soon!]

[Brother, I will avenge you! I will take revenge, no matter how much blood will flood the land, no matter how many bones will pile up like mountains! Even if Ye Clan will collapse and I will die in pieces, I will avenge you!]

[Xiao Xiao, where are you? How is your life now?]

...

Ye Xiao was suffering the second phase of the three months training. It was the last day of the second month now.

He was nearly naked. He only had a small underwear covering his private part. He was floating in the air, connected to a narrow string.

That string was tied to a hair on Ye Xiao's head!

It was just a string but it held his entire body!

That was the challenge he was getting through at the moment. A

narrow string came down from right above his head and bonded to a hair on his head. It would hang him in the air for two hours and all he had to do was not to fall down!

It was such a simple task. He just needed to stay there for two hours. In other words, he would fail if he fell down. Even if he had been there for one hour and fifty-nine minutes but fell down at the last minute, he failed!

That was asking so much from Ye Xiao, to control himself in an extreme level!

How heavy could a hair carry?

Little!

Was it strong enough to lift a man?

That was ridiculous. Not to mention a human, it couldn't even lift clothes, a pair of trousers, or a shoe!

In fact, as long as the man was a cultivator beyond Spirit Origin Stage, it could!

Cultivators who had reached Spirit Origin Stage could keep themselves in a special balance point, so as to make themselves nearly against gravity!

The next problem was that could a cultivator remain in such a position for a long time?

That was probably another yes. However, ninety-nine percent no!

To make the body remain in a position going against gravity didn't just require high cultivation level!

Only when the cultivator kept seizing the balance point with every inch of his muscle, every drop of his blood, every bit of his energy!

He had to make every bit of his body stay in harmony, so as to keep himself hung by a hair for a long time!

Ye Xiao had to do it for two hours!

He had been hanging there for forty-five minutes already!

He felt he was going to freak out.

Hung by a hair for two hours...

That was such a brutal training subject!

Whoever designed this must have a twisted mind!

Or maybe a great genius!

One would only realize the difficult point of this challenge was not the string or the hair after he experienced it!

No matter where on the body that string was tied on, the entire weight would get on the string or the hair.

He might be able to control the string.

However, the string was tied on the hair. That made it a hundred times more difficult!

The point of the entire challenge relied on the skin, where the hair was planted!

No matter how strong that hair or that string was, it didn't matter.

The key was the root of the hair... It all depended on how firmly it was planted on the scalp!

Ye Xiao didn't even dare to try to move himself. Once he did, he might fail it. He could only stay the same gesture, like a dried fish hanging in the air. He didn't even dare to sweat.

It was lucky that he could take off all those Star Steel clothes.

That was so important.

If he wore those clothes, he would definitely fail.

He made a right decision to take everything else off when he removed the Star Steel clothes. It just took off a little bit of weight,

but every bit mattered at the moment!

The three old men were looking at Ye Xiao on the ground. They kept watching his body, and prepared to save him once he fell off, as if he was their most precious treasure.

They looked peaceful, but they actually were excited inside their minds!

They were using mind connection to talk to each other!

"Holy heavens... It actually lifted him..." That was Yun Piaoliu when Ye Xiao just got lifted.

"I'll be damned... He actually can hold it there... I thought this challenge is to make fun of the disciple..." It was Feng Wuying.

"I... I am not dreaming, am I?" This was Lei Dadi.

"Big brother, how long did you hold on up there when you were doing this?" Feng Wuying asked Lei Dadi.

Lei Dadi's face twisted. He said, "I was lifted up. I did get up there, but... I couldn't even hold it till I take a breath... When the hair was tied on the string and I had tried my best to lose my weight, they took away the chair. That moment, I was in a position against gravity. Then I fell. Within the time of a light breath, I touched the floor!"

"That hair... I didn't even feel the hair..."

Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu were gloating. It turned out the eldest one didn't do any better than them.

"I heard that nobody has ever finished this challenge."

"This is eye opening. This kid has a real long breath!"

"It is not just about a long breath... He has an extremely accurate power of control... Otherwise, he would never be able to hang there for such a long time... Oh my heavens. Not to mention the old days, can we even do it now? Or maybe we are able to do it now, but that must be painful."

"I thought the ancestor must have made this as a prank to make fun of us... Now I know it is not true... I am totally impressed!"

"This is definitely a god level training. Nobody in the history has done this. Nobody will do this again in the future..."

...

Chapter 843: Unprecedented!

"Come on. Why are you fussing? Think about it. In the two months, every thing this little monster completed was unprecedented! Did anybody do better than him in any other challenges?"

"Well..."

"Well my ass! None! Look, don't fuss. You are being stupid now. Don't you see?"

"This kid has completely created history!" Lei Dadi was so proud. "In thirty thousand years, only my disciple can do this! Only the disciple that grows under my guidance can achieve such a miracle, create an unprecedented legend!"

"Let me tell you what! There was nobody who did better than him and there will be nobody in the future either!"

In the mind connection, Lei Dadi's voice became ferocious.

"What do you mean your disciple? Your guidance?" Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu jumped up like two cats got stepped on the tails. "He is my disciple too... I teach him a lot with full effort too! Isn't it? ..."

"The kid is going to fall. His determination and his mindset are strong enough, but his cultivation level..." Yun Piaoliu said. He had been watching Ye Xiao.

Lei Dadi and Feng Piaoliu were surprised. They both looked to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao's face was twisted. He was sweating everywhere, scalp, neck... every bit of his body.

- Ta, ta, ta, ta... -

Sweat flowed from his head to his feet and then dropped to the ground. Drop by drop, it was making clear sounds!

Under his feet, there was a puddle of sweat spreading away...

However, he didn't move his body a bit!

He was still staying the same posture, as if he had no weight.

The three old men were worried. They were all cultivation experts, so they knew Ye Xiao was losing it. Ye Xiao was just forcibly holding a breath in the dantian to keep staying up there. If he could exhale that breath of qi out and inhale a new breath to the dantian, it would be much better.

However, if he did that, he would immediately fall. No matter how fast he was, there would be a time gap. It was enough to break the balance of his body, his hair and the string. He would fail the challenge!

In fact, the three old men never thought Ye Xiao could hold it for such a long time. Now he had already gone through nearly two hours. He was still in a steady condition. Only because of his weak cultivation, he couldn't keep it going any longer.

The three grandmaster were anxious, but they couldn't interrupt Ye Xiao unless he himself gave up. They hoped Ye Xiao could become the first man to complete this unbelievable mission after all!

In fact, Ye Xiao was working so hard, because he had a wrong judgment. He reckoned there must be somebody who once had completed this mission in the history!

He believed there must be some real talented figures who had completed this mission since this mission was still there...

He thought if he couldn't finish this, he wouldn't have the opportunity to continue the training...

He got to know the truth after the training though. However, he still thought he should work as hard as he could. In other words, he just didn't want to fail on things that somebody succeeded before! He believed he was able to do anything others could do!

That was why he worked so unbelievably hard in the training!

Of course, Ye Xiao knew that he would be relieved as long as he exhaled that breath of qi in his dantian out. However, he just wasn't willing to give up so soon!

He wanted to finish it! He kept his balance while being driven by his willpower alone. The limitation of his physical condition made him suffer. He was sweating heavily.

He knew he was in a severe situation. He also knew it was so close to two hours now!

It was just ten minutes. He knew he couldn't quit now!

He had to hold it until the two hours ended!

He couldn't control the sweat anymore, so he just let it flow. Maybe it would make him lose some weight...

In the end, the spiritual qi was running slower and slower in his dantian. He was dazzled and nearly passed out. Even so, he kept holding it, controlling his body consciously, trying to keep the balance in every inch of his body.

He would rather die just to make it two hours!

He was exhausted now. The breath of qi in his dantian eventually stopped moving. He would fall down at any second!

However, he still kept holding himself by his strong willpower!

Luckily...

"Two hours! He did it!" Yun Piaoliu looked at the sandglass and said.

Just after he said it, Ye Xiao fell down like a falling meteorite.

He fell down to the floor, facing up to the sky. That was such an awkward and embarrassing posture. However, he didn't care anymore. And he couldn't care more... As he fell down, he immediately lost consciousness. In fact, he was in a coma before he

fell down.

The three old men rushed over to him hurriedly. They held him in the arms and started to pour the energy of life into their beloved disciple's Jing and Mai...

In fact, they all knew Ye Xiao passed out because he was exhausted. A few hours of sleep would bring him back to normal!

However, they still wanted to consume their life energy to make him feel better sooner!

There was a funny truth that none of them knew.

This challenge was not a task that a normal human being in Qing-Yun Realm could complete. At least, cultivators under Dao Origin Stage could never finish this task. This challenge existed in the three months special training because... because the ancestor of the sect who designed this training was fond of pranks...

He designed this to make fun!

That was all!

...

Chapter 844: Worth Dying!

It was reasonable that nobody could complete this task!

If somebody did... just like Ye Xiao now...

If that ancestor knew it, he might jump out from the tomb and shout, "Oh my god! Really? Somebody actually did it? A human?"

Well, Ye Xiao perfectly did it.

The three old men kept pouring energy into Ye Xiao's body. It should take him nearly ten hours to recover and wake up, but now he woke up only after a few breaths. Right after he woke up, he went on the next challenge in the training!

When he woke up, he wished he could stay in a coma for a longer time.

Once the training began, there was no time for rest. There were only death and failure. Ye Xiao had to persist in it while gritting his teeth.

In the first two months, Ye Xiao clearly felt the improvement on his physical condition, mindset, willpower, cultivation. Every part of him was improving fast!

He didn't seem improved in cultivation though. His spiritual power became pure and rich instead!

He used to think that the spiritual qi in his dantian was pure enough, but now he knew it wasn't, and it was becoming even purer!

There was even an unnoticed impurity that got pressed out.

Many problems that seemed impossible to solve were actually solved during the special training!

He might not remain in the same status forever. When the training was finished, the impurity would return to his body, spiritual qi, and energy. However, he would have a broad and

strong cultivation foundation that no impurity would affect him!

That was the perfect foundation that Ye Xiao had never imagined to acquire!

There were many more benefits he could get, such as the sensitivity of spiritual mind, reaction speed, richness of his soul... Everything would be improved!

Ye Xiao was so excited about it!

He even cherished this training more now!

The special training was so frightening though!

In the three torturing months, Ye Xiao felt that it was profitable! In fact, he didn't really understand how profitable it was until he rushed up to Human Realm Upon Heavens...

Only those who got through the three months understood how good it was.

The three months had led him to the path of becoming a super genius!

However, in the history, there was only one person who could get through the three months perfectly!

Ye Xiao!

Or we may say, Ye Chongxiao.

...

It was a sunny day!

Lei Dadi, Feng Wuying, and Yun Piaoliu were sitting around a table with big smiles.

It was the day for celebration!

It was a good day!

Their disciple Ye Chongxiao officially completed the last mission of the three months' training!

Three months!

Ninety days!

Every single subject in the training, Ye Xiao did it perfectly!

He even overdid some missions!

That was an epic record in the history of Qing-Yun Realm for sure!

The only person in history!

"We must drink as much as we can! I am very happy!" Lei Dadi kept drinking liquor and laughed loudly. "I have never been so happy before in my life! I guess this is worth dying for! Even if I die in liquor, I will still laugh!"

"The most talented genius in history is actually my disciple! I taught him everything!" Yun Piaoliu was also rather happy. "Like big brother said, I guess I would love to die in such happiness!"

"Wu Fa! You are in trouble! You are going to get off the position of the No. 1 cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm!" Feng Wuying was smiling while pouring a bowl of liquor to the floor. "Changtian, I guess we are going to avenge you soon! You know what, the three of us have been blaming ourselves for a hundred years because we can't avenge you. We don't want to die. We don't know how to face you down there. Now we do! We will face you with pride and honor!"

Lei Dadi and Yun Piaoliu sighed when they heard him.

Ye Xiao just kept having the food. He was worried.

During the days with the three old grandmasters, every time when they poured energy into his body, he could feel that they were consuming their lives rapidly!

They were losing their lives unstoppably.

The three months, ninety days, everyday, they tried to improve his body three times in full effort! They used their Dao Origin

Stage power and the accurate control to refine every bit of his muscle!

It was an enormous project!

They had to consume a massive amount of their energy!

However, they did their best every time!

Although Ye Xiao felt like going through every corner of hell every time, he knew that the three grandmasters were sacrificing themselves for his own benefit. As long as he could get over it, there would be a bright future ahead of him.

The three old men were simply giving!

Yet they never complained.

Nor did they reserve anything.

They didn't tell Ye Xiao about it even until the training was finished!

Apparently, the three old men didn't want Ye Xiao to carry the burden in his heart!

If Ye Xiao was truly as weak as his cultivation level, he wouldn't know the truth. However, he wasn't. So he knew pretty well about their contribution!

He knew that it was the contribution of the three old men that gave him the opportunity to leave Qing-Yun Realm to the upper realm!

They had sacrificed their lives to build a bridge to the great future for him!

"Let's cut the useless b*llshit. Back to cultivation, the three months training is finished. We are all pretty satisfied with your performance."

Lei Dadi casually took a sip of the liquor and said, "So we decided to keep you here for another month. After all, you have to be

familiar with all martial arts and skills of our sect. Even though you can pick any martial art as you wish, you have to know them first before you choose the one you like the most. Only the martial art that you choose by instinct is the best for you!"

"After the coming month, it will be truly finished. Don't think we are reckless on this. Don't think we are escaping our responsibility either. Masters can always just guide you to a certain direction. It is your own effort that leads you to greatness. We did and we will do whatever we can to help."

...

Chapter 845: Lei Dadi's Boast

Lei Dadi took a long sigh. "The future only belongs to you alone. You have to fight your own battle. What we can do is no more than giving you some advice when you meet any trouble in cultivation. Maybe when you are facing some irresistible temptation... we are always here to warn you. Don't feel embarrassed to talk to us. A man can never just depend on himself."

"However... in the other hand, if you can solve the problem yourself, do not seek for help from us. Everything in your life and every decision you make will eventually benefit yourself. To take your own steps will lead you to the best result."

"Don't be afraid of making mistakes. Just remember to make it right when you know it is wrong." Lei Dadi stared at Ye Xiao. "Even god makes mistakes in his life, not to mention a human being."

Ye Xiao nodded.

He decided to keep that in mind.

For a long time, he was afraid of mistakes. Because of this, he always felt a heavy burden in his heart. He knew how serious things could become when a mistake was made.

However, the old man enlightened him.

Even god makes mistakes!

A man, living in the world for hundreds, thousands, million years... how could he do right on everything single thing?

As long as he could make it right when he found out it was wrong, it would eventually become right!

What is horrible is not the mistake itself, but the fear for making mistakes! It was a psychologic issue.

Ye Xiao suddenly felt open and clear.

"Why so ruthless. When you have nothing else to do, just come

and have a leisure chat with us. However, I don't want you to have any trouble that you have to seek for help either." Yun Piaoliu looked at Ye Xiao with a caring look. "You are the only disciple of us. We are all satisfied with you. We know it."

"You have to remember one thing." Feng Wuying was always the strictest one. He said, "We are your masters, but we are not your babysitters. We never will be!"

"What we want is that when people talk about us, they will be surprised and eventually recognize us as Ye Chongxiao's masters. I don't want you to tell the world that you are our disciple so that nobody dared to mess with you. I also don't want you to be put down and somebody steps on your dead body talking about how stupid your three masters are!"

"Yes, master! I understand!" Ye Xiao seriously said.

"Don't take it personally. This is the rule in Cold Moon Palace. The more talented a disciple is, the less we will restrain him. He will have to decide his own future."

"Only the ordinary disciples need the masters to worry about their future."

Lei Dadi smiled and said, "The true elite never reaches the greatness under the guidance of others. Do you understand? In the future when you have your own disciples, you must keep this in mind. One should live his life on his own! That is the rule in Cold Moon Palace. We are Thunder, Wind and Cloud, three old men. You are Ye Chongxiao. You are unique! Your disciples are unique! You are not our extension. None of your would-be disciple is your extension either."

"Yes. I understand." Ye Xiao was enlightened.

The three old grandmasters nodded.

They actually felt embarrassed when they thought of the reason they needed Ye Xiao to stay for one more month.

At the beginning, they believed Ye Xiao, who was so weak in cultivation, would never hold it longer than one month in the three months special training. That was why Lei Dadi asked Yue Changtian for only three months. That included the special training and the private lessons they were going to give Ye Xiao.

In other words, they had prepared about two months to give Ye Xiao some private lessons.

After all, it would only take Ye Xiao three months when he perfectly finished all the tasks. The three old men believed one month was more or less enough for Ye Xiao to fail the training.

However, unexpectedly, Ye Xiao was such a monster. He perfectly completed every task of the training.

That meant the three old men didn't have time to give any private lessons at all!

They were happy to see that happen, but they really needed more time to give their private lessons to Ye Xiao!

With no other alternatives, they had to ask Yue Changtian for another month.

Yue Changtian was so surprised when he heard them. Lei Dadi answered in a fake-helpless tone. "I never expected he could finish all the three months tasks. We have no choice now. There is no time left for private lessons. That is not our fault really. I guess I have to get another month time... How embarrassing... We are ashamed... We underestimated the young man..."

"What? Finished all?" Yue Changtian heard Master Lei's "humble and helpless" boast, and he truly wanted to laugh out loud and spit on the old man's face while saying: "I really want to spit a mouthful dog shit on your face!"

[Your disciple finished all those horrible tasks and you are ashamed? What? What about us? Should we all go hang ourselves because of shame?]

"Well... Is one month enough?" Yue Changtian surely didn't dare to be rude, so he asked a question.

He did worry about whether one month was enough.

"Don't worry. My disciple has a big weakness, he has a brilliant brain! He is not like human being at all. He's like a monster..." Lei Dadi kept gloating. He "humbly" said, "I think the heavens will envy him because he is too wise and smart. I am speechless about it. One month is enough for him to learn everything from the three of us thoroughly. He will remember every word of the martial arts of our sect for sure... It is so frustrating to have such a wonderful disciple. I feel so sad, but I don't know whom to tell my grievance to..."

Yue Changtian couldn't endure this anymore. His face turned dark and he said, "Just take care yourself. Let's just make it one more month."

Then he left the place fast without even looking back.

He had seen people gloating, but not in such an unbelievable way...

[You are sad?]

[F*ck you! Why don't you give me that grievance?]

[I long for that grievance! I love that grievance! Why can't it hit me?]

[I am so speechless!]

...

However, heavens saw everything. One would have to take responsibility for what he said!

In the next one month, Lei Dadi and the other two old men exactly experienced what that grievance felt like.

...

Chapter 846: This Is A Tragedy!

No matter what martial formula it was, Ye Xiao could recite it after listening to it for one time.

That was not the most unbelievable part. After reciting, he would start to operate it. In one breath, he was lost in it and the spiritual qi started to run in his dantian... In the third breath... he suddenly woke up and said indifferently, "Master, I think there must be something wrong with this martial art formula... Look. What if I make a change here? Isn't it better?"

Lei Dadi had thought about giving the ignorant young man a tough lesson. That martial art formula was the work of so many generations after all. [You just learned it a few minutes ago! How dare you challenge its rationality... Stop making dreams...] However, as he thought deeper, he found that Ye Xiao was probably right about it. So he started to make a test run on the new formula, and only to find out... [Oh? It is a better way to operate it. He is right about this!]

He didn't believe Ye Xiao was really that good at it!

He believed Ye Xiao was just lucky!

However, after that, no matter what martial art it was, Ye Xiao could operate it right away while he was listening to the formula! It was so close to the "right" movements!

It was close, not exactly the same. Why was that?

After operating the martial arts for a few minutes, he would go talk to his master. "Master, look at this. Here it should be a turn-back, right? What if I keep the foot firmly rooted on the floor and twist the waist so as to hit it through the shoulder and directly shoot out from the finger? How about that? Isn't it better?"

Lei Dadi wanted to scold, but he had no idea now. He thought for a while and tried that new method. He then frowned. [He is...

somehow... partially... weirdly... luckily... fortunately... right about it...]

[He is such a lucky guy. That must be his good luck!]

Hmm... As they started another martial art, right after Lei Dadi told him the formula, he operated and then stopped. "Master, this is a brilliant martial art. However, what if I hold it there and reverse the Cold Moon Art a bit to match it, push two streams of qi up at the same time? It seems even faster? Isn't it?"

Lei Dadi's face turned dark. "Hmm... That's right..."

After two days, Lei Dadi was totally broken.

One would really take responsibility for what he had said!

Sad! What a sad story!

He had learned those things for his entire life, yet his disciple mastered all of them within two days and even improved them!

Was it really just good luck?

Maybe it was luck for the first and second time. What about the third and forth? What about all those after that? Were those all because of his good luck?

"Master, where are you going?"

"I am going to find your Master Feng. It should be his turn." Lei Dadi walked fast away with a solemn face.

"Master, don't you want to teach me more?"

"Kid, listen. Why don't you try to show understanding and sympathy for me? I am old and I have taught you for two days. I am tired. Look, your Master Feng will teach you more..." And then he just disappeared.

[What else do I have to teach you? Nothing...]

After two days.

Feng Wuying was leaving. "I am going to talk to you Master Yun.

I am not tired, but he wants to teach you so badly. I think we shouldn't keep him waiting for too long..."

After another two days.

Yun Piaoliu was exclaiming, "You two old bastards! Come out! Show yourselves... Don't hide! We should do this together! Damn it... Where are you... Don't pretend dead... Show yourselves!"

At the end, three great superior cultivators had taught their disciple for ten days in total!

The last four days, they taught him together.

After all those lessons... the three old men all felt so foolish as if they were simply three empty beds.

They truly had nothing more to teach.

Ye Xiao had learned everything from them...

He had even learned most of the martial world experience he should know...

Sometimes, when the disciple was too clever, the master would always feel upset.

When they realized there was nothing they could teach, that was so embarrassing... They felt so ashamed.

[With all that we know, how do we teach a disciple like that?]

[That is so embarrassing!]

[This is so annoying!]

One day.

The three old men sat together, showing grievance on the faces. They truly wanted to weep for what happened.

"After all this... what if I meet an old friend of mine on the street someday..." Lei Dadi looked so upset. "I truly have no idea what should I explain to him. I got myself a disciple and it took me only two days to teach him everything I have... Does that mean I am so

lame or I mislead the young man? I guess they will tease me till I die."

"They may say this, 'not to mention misleading the young lads, Lei Dadi, what the hell on earth have you learned in your life? How do you dare to be his master with such a terrible capability?' ..." Feng Wuying said.

"Piss off!" Lei Dadi raged up. "Why just me? You think only I got humiliated here? What about you two? We three are going to bear the humiliation out there together!"

"I guess we have nothing to teach him anymore... although he is still weak in cultivation..." Yun Piaoliu looked frustrated. "I guess he is even more experienced than we do... Maybe we are weaker than him in many other things..."

"Why don't we let him go independent now?" Feng Wuying suggested it.

"No!" Lei Dadi and Yun Piaoliu didn't agree. Lei Dadi was angry. "What if somebody ask about it? That is embarrassing! There will be people who will find out the truth, but I would rather keep that among us three as long as possible! The later it's exposed the better!"

"Then let's throw him into the Library of Fame! Nobody would find it weird. It will be easy to explain why we did it." Yun Piaoliu made the suggestion.

"Good! Let's do it!"

Three old funny men had an agreement.

"Let him go read the story of our ancestors and heroes... Let him know more about our history... He will have a stronger sense of belonging to the sect..."

Thus, an order was made. Ye Xiao was locked in the Library of Fame.

The three old men didn't know that this was exactly the place where Ye Xiao wanted to stay the most.

In this place, he could learn almost all the secrets of Qing-Yun Realm!

Cold Moon Palace was not the strongest sect in Qing-Yun Realm, but it was one of the most time-honored!

In other words, every part of the history of Qing-Yun Realm that could be recorded by letters, could be found in this library!

Ye Xiao kept reading the books fast in that place. He was obsessed!

...

Chapter 847: Generation to Generation

Ye Xiao was now capable of accurately filtering useless information. He just skimmed the bookshelves and he knew which book he should read next...

The other books, he just ignored them.

He skimmed through books one after another...

He went to the next room after finishing all books in one room.

The disciples who were guarding the Library of Fame thought that he must be messing around the books...

It looked like he was messing around in there though!

On the twenty-ninth day of that month...

The three old grandmasters returned to this place.

Ye Xiao was reading a book in the Library of Fame. He thought it was the most valuable book he had ever found in that place!

'The Secret of the Three Factions'!

He had read every book he needed to read. At the end, he realized something rather important so he went back to carefully read this book again.

"Here... the king descended to the realm when the three lights unite. Blood and soul return to origin when the lands is going to become one... Interesting." Ye Xiao frowned and read it slowly.

"Why does it sound like... like... it is like a prediction... but... the king... three lights... blood and soul... They must mean something. Three lights may be Sun, Moon, and Star. That is talking about Saint Sunlight Sect, Saint Starlight Sect and Cold Moon Palace. In my previous life, I got to know their filthy business... Hmm... They invaded and occupied the Sky Soul Mountain and killed my brother... That was the beginning of the fight against the three factions... till it was too late to make a change..."

"It turns out there is a secret behind their appearance. However, I guess this is the best these books can tell... I don't think I can get more in this place..."

"I have learned a lot that I didn't know before I got to this place..." He slowly closed the book and murmured, "The world is colorful and wonderful..."

There seemed to be something that could lead him to the truth of his close friend's death. It also indicated why the three factions had to occupy those places...

They would even kill millions to get those places... There must be a reason!

However, because he knew more now, there were more questions.

What he knew, including what he had learned before, only described a rough image of the truth. He was yet to know the actual truth. He had to learn many things and put the pieces together so as to see the clear image.

However, in his heart, there was a word that resounded strongly in his mind. 'Soul'!

That was it. Soul!

Those places the three factions wanted were all related to the word 'soul'!

Sky Soul Mountain.

Thousand Soul Valley.

Soul Tomb Ridge.

...

And so on...

Every place that the three factions had sacrificed much to occupy had the word soul in its name.

Ye Xiao wouldn't believe it was just a coincidence!

However, that happened too long before. Those places were all in different locations in the Qing-Yun Realm. It was not that easy to figure out how weird it was that all those people had the same word in their names.

They successfully seized dozens of places within one hundred years... That was ordinary for a great sect. Even Ye Xiao didn't realize the names if he didn't read the book!

He stopped moving and suddenly felt dizzy in the head. He just wanted to read the book again, but Lei Dadi's voice resounded loudly from outside. "Chongxiao, come out!"

Hmm. His three masters came to pick him up.

He had been living with the three old men for a few months. However, he clearly felt that the three old men loved him so deeply!

It was definitely doting!

It looked like they wanted to train him to death everyday, but in Ye Xiao's heart, he knew the old men had been sacrificing their lives to improve him!

For such a long time, the three old men kept using their own life energy to refine his body!

When he walked out the library and saw the three masters, he was shocked.

What he saw were three old men in senility. One month earlier, they had white-hair and had wrinkles all over their face face. However, they were still spirited and looked strong by then. Now, they just looked pretty senile.

They were shaking in the blowing wind with white hairs on the heads. When they walked, they staggered... there were even senile plaque on their faces!

That meant they were dying!

Ye Xiao was astonished.

"Masters, what..." Ye Xiao walked over to them hurriedly, "What... is wrong?"

Lei Dadi smiled blandly. He said, "Nothing is wrong. We are running out of life energy. We never had much time to live. It is fine to just leave a bit earlier. We have fulfilled our biggest dream after all. We used to think we would die in regret, but it turns out the truth is so kind to us. It is a good thing that we can go meet our departed brothers down there soon."

Yun Piaoliu stared at Ye Xiao and smiled. "I guess there is always regret. We finally fulfilled one dream, yet we started to make a new wish. I guess we are not able to wait till the day you conquer the entire Qing-Yun Realm. I guess human being can never be contented... Heh... We all know that day will come. It is just a shame that we can't see it happen."

Feng Wuying laughed. "However... Chongxiao, you are free now. Totally free. Nobody is going to restrain you." He looked gawky and said, "Your life is in your own hand now!"

Ye Xiao's eyes were moistened by tears.

He surely knew the three old men had been injured badly in the old days. They should have passed away a long time before, yet they still had a strong will to fulfill their dream. That was how they hang on till this moment.

Now that they finally had a perfect, brilliant and over-performing disciple, they were relieved.

They believed what they wanted would be done by their disciple sooner or later.

They finally let go of all the burdens on their shoulders.

Other than that, they had been consuming their life energy for a

few months. They couldn't handle it anymore.

At this moment, they could still come to see Ye Xiao because they wanted to see him one more time and tell him their last words!

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He walked over to hold the three old grandmasters. The moment he touched Lei Dadi's back, he could feel the old man's body become relaxed.

He made a long sigh.

...

Chapter 848: Life Origin Dan!

That night.

Ye Xiao entered the Boundless Space. It had been a few months since he last got in the Space. He saw Erhuo playing with a few snakes. It looked so entertained. Ye Xiao walked in with a dark face and said, "Erhuo, give me a few Life Origin Dan beads! I don't need it to be supreme level. Just give me some dan beads in level of dan mist. I am in a hurry, so cut the crap from your mouth."

Erhuo was shocked.

It was just having fun with the little snakes. Suddenly Ye Xiao gave him such a task. It was stunned. "Meow."

Ye Xiao frowned. Looking at Erhuo, he looked fierce and scary.

Erhuo knew that he wasn't joking. There was no negotiation that it could go on with...

One should lower the head while living under other's roof. How could it violate its master's command?

It held its tail between its two legs and meowed. Ye Xiao didn't respond. It was afraid, so it went to the tunnel and focused on making dan beads...

Erhuo's experience taught it that it should do whatever the master want it to do when he looked serious and solemn!

Otherwise, things would become rather nasty!

It was right.

Ye Xiao was having a complicated feeling.

There was a contradiction in his heart. As Xiao Monarch, because of the grudge he had for the three factions, he should never help the three old grandmasters. He should watch them die and do absolutely nothing!

However, as Ye Chongxiao, righteously, he should definitely try whatever he could to save the three old men. Many people in Cold Moon Palace, including the three grandmasters, Zhan Yunfei, Xiao Mufei and the departed Fang Dalong, had been rather caring to him. Even though they all did that for their own sect, Ye Xiao was the one who benefited. How could he just see the old men die!

But if he saved them, how could he face the past grudges in his previous life?

If he didn't, how could he face his conscience?

He had been thinking for a long time, and in the end, he decided to save them!

He never forgot what he should do, but he couldn't let himself become somebody he hated. He couldn't leave regrets for the rest of his life. Since he was able to save the old men, why wouldn't he?

However, even though he decided to save them, he had to think of a way to save them!

He should never give the old men the most powerful supreme dan beads, because if he did, he would become suspicious. Even though he did that for the three grandmasters, the sect would definitely become his enemy.

When he was in the Land of Han-Yang, it took him so much work to make the auction of supreme dan begin. What he displayed in the auction were all normal supreme dan beads. If he directly showed people the Life Origin Dan...

That would be a huge problem. It would be a big trouble!

The second day.

Ye Xiao ran into the cottage with a bottle in his hand.

"Why in such a hurry? Are you going to leave so soon?" Lei Dadi laughed. He didn't feel annoyed though.

However, Ye Xiao could feel it from the old men's eyes that they

truly didn't want to see him leave. Lei Dadi said with a smile, "Go ahead. Show everybody how powerful you are. Kick their asses hard! That's my good disciple. A good teach and a brilliant student... Hahaha..."

"I am not in a hurry to leave. I am here to give you something, Masters." Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "I wonder if you remember that when I was in the Land of Han-Yang, my master was a dan maker. I was mostly cultivating the art of dan and just a little of martial art... When my beloved master died, he gave me everything he had... I checked on the stuffs he left to me and I found some dan beads. That was surprising. I guess maybe the dan beads can help you in a certain extent?"

Then he gave them the jade bottle in his hand.

Yun Piaoliu smiled bitterly and said, "Chongxiao, we are happy that you could think of us. However, these wounds in us are no ordinary wounds. We have lost too much life energy. No matter how good the dan beads are, they can't cure us. We know you have given Xiao Mufei a supreme dan bead and cured him immediately. I also know that was the only supreme dan bead you have. Even if you have more supreme dan beads now, they may not be useful on our wounds. Only those that could condense souls can help us..."

He took over the bottle and continued speaking, "That is Life Origin Dan. It is so rare... You are a dan-maker from Land of Han-Yang. I guess the dan beads you have are all dan beads in the lower realm. In fact, even dan-makers in Qing-Yun Realm can't make Life Origin Dan beads... We know you are a good man, but..."

Suddenly, he stopped talking.

The next moment, his eyes lit up!

His hands started to tremble...

"What is it? Why suddenly so rude. Is it a supreme dan bead again?" Lei Dadi asked. He wasn't so interested.

Feng Wuying shook his head and said, "If the dan doesn't meet our requirement, it won't help even if it is in supreme level!"

"But... this is not supreme level dan... This is Life Origin Dan!" Yun Piaoliu held the bottle. His entire body was trembling. "There are a few dan beads, recognized as the dan that could extend our lives... Life Origin Dan!"

"Life Origin Dan!" Lei Dadi and Feng Wuying stood up immediately.

Three white-haired heads crowded together. They talked like they have already accepted their imminent death, but in fact, nobody could embrace death with pleasure.

Nobody wanted to die if there was hope for living!

For so many years, the three of them had visited countless dan-makers. The entire Cold Moon Palace had spent a lot for them. Many people knew the recipe of Life Origin Dan, but nobody could make any! There had never been any useful Life Origin Dan beads for them!

Qing-Yun Realm had dan-makers who was capable of making Life Origin Dan, but they could only make Life Origin Dan beads in a normal quality. It might be quite useful for normal cultivators, but the three grandmaster were Dao Origin Stage masters.

After being disappointed so many times, they had given up on it.

They had never expected this, but at the end of their lives, when they were well prepared to embrace death in peace, those Life Origin Dan beads that might save their lives appeared!

...

Chapter 849: Gratitude Is Gratitude; Hatred Is Hatred!

The dan beads showed up so unexpectedly!

The three old men had never seen any Life Origin Dan in such high quality!

At this moment, the three old men couldn't even believe what they saw! They wondered if they were in a sweet dream!

However, they didn't dare to even think of such precious dan beads in their dreams!

Lei Dadi's hands were shaking. He poured the dan beads out from the bottle. The dan beads were rolling in his hand. A mass of dense mist rose up slowly.

They were misty dan beads! [1]

[Am I really not dreaming this? Isn't it too luxurious to have this in a dream?]

The three old men's fingers were all shaking.

There were actually six misty dan beads!

The dan beads were rolling in his hand. The dan mist was rising. After a while, the entire room was filled by the mist.

...

Ye Xiao didn't say anything. He left the room quietly.

He could totally understand the three old men.

They would never want anybody to see their weakness.

That was why Ye Xiao chose to leave.

He looked solemn while waiting outside the door.

[Of course I will take revenge. And I also need to return the favor. However, they are two different things!] Ye Xiao took a long

breath.

[The three factions are my enemies. They killed me and my brother. How can I not take revenge on them?]

[I won't forget that pain!]

[However, I can't just let the three old men die just because of the hatred in my heart for the three factions. They have been so nice to me!]

[Two different things. Totally two different things.] Ye Xiao kept telling himself.

[Gratitude is gratitude; hatred is hatred!]

[I have to stick to my own principle. I can't be a conscienceless animal!]

He suddenly felt pleased.

Of course he was pleased. He was following his heart!

After a while, the three old men got out.

They looked at Ye Xiao with a rather complex expression in the eyes!

Ye Xiao took a breath of relief. The three old men looked much better. That qi of morbid aura disappeared.

Instead, there was strong qi around them like great mountains.

That was some vigorous qi that couldn't be described specifically.

The dan beads worked perfectly.

Lei Dadi stared at Ye Xiao for a long while with a complicated expression in the eyes. He sighed and said, "Six Life Origin Dan beads in misty level... What a great fortune... Chongxiao, we owe you a big one."

Yun Piaoliu smiled bitterly. "I never expected to get such a great help from a disciple that I just recruited not long ago. The six dan beads are enough for us to live another fifty years of energetic

lives."

The three old men shook their heads and laughed.

Ye Xiao thought they would ask him some questions, yet none of them asked anything. It seemed the three old men didn't want to know where he got the dan beads at all. They didn't want to know whether he had more of that dan beads either.

It appeared that the three grandmasters believed his excuses.

He took a breath of relief and said, "In fact, before I ascended, I was the inheritor of my master, also a Sky Origin Stage cultivator. I won't give up the art of dan-making. I believe someday, I will be good enough to make you more Life Origin Dan beads. My dan-making master used to say that I am much talented in dan-making than in martial art. If I can concentrate on the art of dan-making, maybe I can bring the legendary supreme dan back to the world!"

Lei Dadi smiled and said, "Wait. Stop there. We are more than satisfied to have those dan beads to extend our lives. The first priority of you is to improve your cultivation. The competition has begun. Get off here now."

"I know you are good at dan-making, but I have to tell you one thing. From now on, never tell anybody about how good you are in dan-making. Don't show off. Don't say that you are better in the art of dan-making than in martial art! Otherwise, you will have a rather miserable future. Qing-Yun Realm is a world controlled by those with bigger fists after all!" Feng Wuying warned him.

"Put that idea down for now. Stop thinking about the art of dan-making. I only want you to do one thing." Yun Piaoliu said, "From now on, no matter where you are, I want you to fight for the highest position!"

Ye Xiao nodded slowly. He said, "Yes, Masters. I won't tell anybody about my dan-making capability. I will focus on martial art cultivation. I will become the best in the sect!"

"You have to be patient. I reckon you will get beaten during the first few days. You are weak in cultivation after all. However, don't be frustrated." Feng Wuying said, "We believe you will completely change that situation. You just need some time."

Ye Xiao nodded. "Yes, master."

"You are in the middle phase of level six of Spirit Origin Stage. When you talk to others, remember, you are Xiao Mufei's disciple, also Fang Dalong's disciple. Ye Chongxiao."

Lei Dadi frowned and said, "Enough for the chitchat. Off you go!"

He was not so happy that he had to assign his only brilliant disciple to somebody else's league. However, it was for the safety of Ye Chongxiao.

No matter how unhappy he was, he had to let it be.

Ye Xiao left.

The three old men watched Ye Xiao leaving. Ye Xiao walked down the mountain with long clothes floating in the air. The three old men made a long sigh.

"Our disciple carries a lot of secrets. I thought his talent in martial art cultivation was the most astonishing thing to me, however, look at him. A dan-maker who can make supreme dan said that he is better at dan-making than in martial art! What does that mean?" Lei Dadi blandly said.

"That isn't important. The more secrets he has, the better." Feng Wuying twisted his mouth. "I don't think it is a bad thing to let him have some secrets. If he has no secrets, what kind of man is he?"

"That's true." Yun Piaoliu squinted at Lei Dadi. "Don't you have your own secrets too? That year, you fell in love with our senior disciple sister... You have been hiding the secret love in your heart... Humph. We just didn't want to unmask it... Do you think you really are good at keeping secrets..."

Lei Dadi blushed. He shouted, "You bastard! A mouthful of nonsense! Why don't you just get the f*ck out of my sight right now!"

Yun Piaoliu humphed and said, "All in all, it is good that Chongxiao has some secrets, but if he doesn't tell us, it is fine. We have to remember one thing. He is our disciple and he is extremely nice to us! Think about the Life Origin Dan beads he gave us. If anybody tell me he is against us, I will never believe it!"

Lei Dadi was furious. "You are talking nonsense! Don't you think I surely know such an obvious thing? Do you think I need you to tell me that? I was just asking you two not to ask him for things he doesn't want to tell! Do you understand? Everybody has secrets. There are things that don't have to be said! Do you understand?"

...

—————

[1] In case anybody forgets, dan has nine grades. Dan beyond grade seven is misty dan, which has some mist around the dan beads.

Chapter 850: Who Was Beaten?

Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu humphed and said, "You are talking nonsense! Do you think we need to hear that?"

Then they both left.

Lei Dadi raged up furiously and rushed over to them. There they began a big fight.

[When Xuan Bing fought over to the sect, I didn't dare to really fight against her, because I still have a wish that has not been fulfilled yet. I have been so upset about that since then. Now I have dozens of years more! I must give the two old bastards a lesson...]

The three of them suddenly started a fight!

...

Xiao Mufei suddenly had a disciple's disciple.

Ye Chongxiao.

When Ye Xiao came to him, he was blank in the head.

Among all the people of low levels, only Xiao Mufei knew the real status of Ye CHongxiao.

[Well... he is actually my master's disciple brother... for real!]

[Now he actually bowed to me... and participate in the competition as my disciple's disciple?]

Xiao Mufei felt weird about it. He just couldn't get used to the way they called each other yet.

"Alright. Chongxiao, what level are you right now?" Xiao Mufei asked.

He had called Ye Xiao 'Chongxiao' for a long time on the way back to the sect. However, he still felt weird about it now!

"Spirit Origin Stage. Level six." Ye Xiao sad.

"Hmm. Go to the Spirit Origin Stage group and stay with your disciple brothers in the competition." Xiao Mufei quickly made the decision and said, "If you have nothing else to do, just focus on cultivation. Don't bother me if you don't have to. Just fight your way up. Things will be better."

Then he disappeared.

He must leave. He felt more and more embarrassed as he stayed there longer.

After Xiao Mufei left, the disciples all crowded over.

About twenty of them came back to the sect with Ye Xiao from the ambushes. Now they felt quite close to Ye Xiao.

"Chongxiao, you are back! It has been a while. Where have you been? Why did you come back when the competition begins? You should have been here earlier to get ready for it."

"Well, but you don't need to worry. This is how the ground competition runs. Only the one with the stronger fist wins. In fact, who has a weaker fist will only get punched. That is nothing. Really."

"That's right... Come on. Fight me. Let me see what you've got!"

Ye Xiao stared at the man who wanted to fight. "Seriously? Shame on you... You are level four of Dream Origin Stage. How could you shamelessly come ask a fight against me..."

"Hahaha..."

After chitchatting for a while, Ye Xiao finally figured out what the ground competition truly was.

In fact, it was a combat competition with simple rules.

Disciples in Spirit Origin Stage should gather together. Among these disciples, those who were guided by the same master should battle until there was a winner. All winners would battle so as to come up with a winner of Spirit Origin Stage in the sect.

Rules for Dream Origin Stage cultivators were a bit more complicated.

After all, cultivators in Dream Origin Stage had huge differences in cultivation capability. It was pointless to put two people who couldn't be compared to each other in combat!

Disciples of Dream Origin Stage would be divided into five grades.

Level one and two were in the first grade. Level three and four made the second. Level five and six were the third. Level seven and eight were the fourth. Those above level nine were in the fifth grade.

Only disciples in Dao Origin Stage below level four would join the ground competition. Those beyond level four were all important figures in the sect who would not join the competition.

In the end, the winner of Spirit Origin Stage group could have a battle against Dream Origin Stage cultivators. Whoever became the winner in the first grade of Dream Origin Stage group could ask for a battle against disciples in the second grade. Whoever had the capability to become the winner has the opportunity to challenge the upper group, until he became the winner of all.

In other words, who dared to try and also had the power to keep winning the combats could fight the way up to the peak!

In fact, even though the rules for lower level disciples to get in the combat against stronger disciples were there, seldom were there people who really used the rules. Sometimes, there would be a Spirit Origin Stage winner who would join the ground competition against some Dream Origin Stage disciples and then get defeated in the end. After all, it was a huge gap between the two cultivation stages!

None of the Dream Origin Stage winner ever dared to challenge Dao Origin Stage disciples. Dao Origin Stage cultivators were the

strongest group of people in the entire Qing-Yun Realm after all. They were so proud and dignified. They wouldn't accept the challenge from a Dream Origin Stage cultivator. However, if somebody used the rule to forcibly challenge a Dao Origin Stage disciple, he might get himself killed. Nobody would claim responsibility for the death. That was why disciples below Dao Origin Stage never dared to challenge Dao Origin Stage disciples in the ground competition!

Ye Xiao thought, [How much time do I have for cultivation? How much time do I need before I challenge a Dream Origin Stage disciple in the competition?]

While he was thinking, he felt somebody's unfriendly gaze.

The entire Cold Moon Palace treated Ye Xiao in a rather caring way. People in the leadership treated Ye Xiao as if he was their only treasure in the sect. Nobody ever held hostility to Ye Xiao. That was why Ye Xiao noticed the hostile gaze at the first time.

He turned around and saw a young man in cyan clothes. He was staring at Ye Xiao with fierce eyes. He looked alerted.

It was the best Spirit Origin Stage disciple, Cheng Feiyu.

In fact, he was only the best among Xiao Mufei's disciples. If Ye Xiao didn't join them, Cheng Feiyu would definitely become the winner of Xiao Mufei's group. Everybody knew it.

Now Ye Xiao showed up and drew away so many people's attention.

Cheng Feiyu was jealous and hostile about it.

He could see the cultivation level of Ye Xiao. [A level six trash. How dare you carry that arrogant face here! You are just a frog in the well. You don't know how high the sky can be!]

Ye Xiao smiled blandly and then turned around.

He really didn't have time to care about a small figure like that.

In the afternoon, the ground competition started.

...

That night, Xiao Mufei sat in his room and asked, "Ye Chongxiao. How is he? How many battles has he joined? Did he get beaten hard several times?"

A Dream Origin Disciple smiled bitterly and answered, "Beaten? Several times? No... Not even once..."

"Not even once?" Xiao Mufei frowned. "Are you telling me he quit the combat? He quit the ground competition?"

"Maybe you can think of him in a better way..." The disciple looked so upset. "Ye Chongxiao is a crazy man! Today, only one day, over seventy disciples below level six of Spirit Origin Stage got beaten up hard by him..."

...

Chapter 851: Breakthrough?

"What..." Xiao Mufei was speechless about that. "Is it exaggerated? Over seventy? One afternoon?"

He was surely surprised. It was... truly too fast!

To fight and defeat over seventy people in one afternoon, Ye Chongxiao must be utterly stronger than those people.

[They are all level six of Spirit Origin Stage... Ye Chongxiao is a rookie! How can he possibly be so powerful? He actually swept all that in the same level with him.]

"It is not just fast..." The disciple was sad. "I haven't seen a monster like him before... He fought against the level six disciples and kept winning. That is fine. When he was fighting somebody after the seventieth one, while he was fighting, he broke through and entered level seven right away! After all the level six people were knocked down, he started to fight against disciples in level seven! It is a little more acceptable if he broke through to level seven from the top phase of level six. That meant it was reasonable that he could defeat those level six brothers so easily. However, after he just reached level seven, before I left, he knocked down several level seven disciples... I have no idea what the hell was going on out there..."

"What? What did you just say?" Xiao Mufei widely opened his eyes. The words were resounding loudly in his ears. He couldn't believe it. He was confused.

[That young man ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. That's right. He should be a bit stronger than the others in the same level. But this... this is too exaggerated! Doesn't he need some time to get used to a new level? Doesn't he need time to improve bit by bit? Why did he keep boosting up like that?]

[This is abnormal...]

"Master, I don't think Disciple Nephew Ye is improving in a reasonable step..." The disciple was worried. He was one of the disciples who returned to the sect with Ye Xiao. He did care for this Disciple Nephew Ye. He didn't want Ye Xiao to get into any trouble.

It was forbidden for cultivators to be too aggressive in cultivation. It might lead to some real serious results in the future.

Xiao Mufei was worried too.

He didn't hesitate and took out a jade plate. He wrote his concern on the plate and sent it away.

It was a communication system inside the sect. There was a huge magic array. It allowed people to transmit information from one person to another. It was real convenient.

Xiao Mufei was surely sending the message to Zhan Yunfei. On the plate, it showed his concern about Ye Chongxiao's unreasonable progress in cultivation. He was unqualified to send message to the three old grandmasters. The only person he could contact was Zhan Yunfei, who was also one of the people who knew about Ye Chongxiao. Besides, just like Xiao Mufei, Zhan Yunfei cared for Ye Chongxiao!

Zhan Yunfei's message arrived very quick. Compared to Xiao Mufei's long message, Zhan Yunfei's reply was extremely simple. There were only a few words: "Stop worrying sh*t!"

Xiao Mufei was shocked and speechless. He talked to the disciple, "Don't worry about him. Let's just see what happens next."

He didn't really feel relieved, so he took out a purple plate and sent a message to Prime Master Yue Changtian.

The jade plates were in different levels. Plates to Prime Master were purple. Plates to the three grandmasters were orange. Plates to elders like Zhan Yunfei were yellow. The others were only the color of jade. People below Xiao Mufei's position had no rights to

use the plates. If all disciples could use the plates to send messages, that would be a lot of conversation to deal with everyday!

"The first day Ye Chongxiao came to my group, he swept all level six Spirit Origin Stage disciples and broke through to level seven, then he continued to sweep the floor with the level seven disciples. In my opinion, he has been invincible among the same level disciples."

...

Before midnight, everyone were in the bed.

Some level seven Spirit Origin Stage disciples who hadn't fought against Ye Xiao all felt relieved.

[What a monster! He swept out all level six brothers!]

[Then he went on to fight the level seven people... What was he doing...]

[If he had enough time, he might knock down all level seven people too!]

Ye Xiao was beating them, simple, easy and fast. Those who were in the same level with him could only hold three strikes before they got off the stage.

The stage had become Ye Xiao's personal show.

"Why is there a monster among us... This is insane..." The disciples all complained about it.

It was such a story of grievance to live in the same world at the same time with a talented monster!

At night.

Ye Xiao was sitting in meditation on top of a big tree, absorbing energy from the air.

He looked just like the other disciples, absorbing energy from moonlight.

In fact, it was East-rising Purple Qi running inside his dantian!

In fact, that was officially the first day he cultivated himself in Qing-Yun Realm in this life.

The three months before that, the spiritual power in his body operated automatically. He couldn't cultivate himself at all.

The special training was to make his cultivation foundation stronger. There shouldn't be any accidents during the training. East-rising Purple Qi was too strong and marvelous. It would recover Ye Xiao's energy fast. If Ye Xiao used East-rising Purple Qi in that training, he wouldn't really get trained and improved greatly. In the four months of training, Ye Xiao hadn't operated East-rising Purple Qi at all.

However, when he was in the combat, he let loose of the restraint on East-rising Purple Qi. He felt a great amount of spiritual qi was gathering over to him from the world and entering his body in a crazy speed.

That was why he suddenly broke through to the upper level while he was in a fight!

He didn't have any special feeling when he just reached level seven.

After all the fights were done, at the end of the day, while he was sitting on the tree absorbing energy from the nature, he clearly felt the changes on his body!

As he operated the East-rising Purple Qi, he started to tremble.

Suddenly, from his dantian, a stream of spiritual qi shot out and ran over every part of his body. After that, the fresh spiritual qi from all over the world were moving over to him rapidly. Not only spiritual qi from the world, even the energy from the moonlight was running towards him...

When Ye Xiao sat in meditation, he always kept counting how many rounds he had done... However, now he didn't need to do

that anymore. As long as he started it, the energy flow would run inside his body automatically for several rounds!

The three grandmasters had taught him three martial art techniques: Cold Moon Sky, Art of Moon Essence, and Sacred Glow of Moon. He didn't intentionally go practice any of them. He just operated East-rising Purple Qi to absorb energy from everywhere and then ran the energy in three methods indicated by the three techniques. The techniques naturally got improved in him.

...

Chapter 852: Fast Improvement

Compared to just practicing one at a time, it was much more efficient to practice several of them at the same time, so that each technique would work along well with the others.

East-rising Purple Qi was running in a high speed. The purple qi floating in the air was entering Ye Xiao's body. It flowed with the spiritual qi in his body and reached his dantian. After running in his dantian, it ran out and became a part of his own energy.

After a while, he felt his dantian was rather swollen. After that, it suddenly shrank. He tried to keep balance in it, and then the feeling of being swollen was gone.

He didn't relax though. After he checked on it, he found that the qi turned into energy and entered every cell of his body.

The energy was hidden inside the cells.

They would continue influencing him after he finished cultivation!

He finally realized how much the three months special training really had given him!

The three months of hell, he didn't rise to a higher level, but it turned his body into a giant storage! Every cell of his body was a small stock! Every stock could contain certain amount of spiritual qi!

When he needed spiritual qi, he could activate them immediately!

If a man's Jing and Mai were like streams, his Jing and Mai were like rivers! Around the rivers, there were lots of lakes too!

As long as the river needed water, the lakes would pour water into the river!

When the river was flooding, the lakes would drain lots of water

away!

No matter when, it kept the river running heavily!

That was a fantastic status that Ye Xiao had dreamt of in his previous life. If he could stay in such a wonderful status till Dao Origin Stage, what would happen to his cultivation?

He was so excited that he would tremble whenever he thought of it.

The moonlight was shining on Ye Xiao.

Inside Cold Moon Palace's territory, no matter where it was, there would be a bright moon in the sky at night!

Cold Moon Palace, which depends on the power of moonlight, could never let the moon disappear!

Not even just one night!

Xiao Mufei stood in front of the door and looked at the trees around.

Thousands of disciples, including Ye Xiao, were all cultivating on the branches of those big trees. They were absorbing the energy from the moonlight. Somebody cultivated inside the house though. The wall of the house didn't block any energy from the moon, however, in their hearts, it just didn't feel right. That was why most of the disciples would cultivate on the tree.

After cultivating, they would return to their rooms to rest.

When all disciples were deep in meditation, there would be lots of light spots shining on the trees. It was the light the disciples created when absorbing energy from the moonlight.

Fifty-three light spots were shining brighter than the others. It was the Dream Origin Stage disciples who were in Xiao Mufei's group.

Xiao Mufei suddenly felt sad. Before they went to Polar Ice River, there had been over three hundred bright spots like that on the

trees at night.

Now there were only fifty-three.

The dim light spots were Spirit Origin Stage disciples...

[Wait... Something is not right!]

Xiao Mufei felt that there was something wrong...

He thought for a long time and realized it. [Wrong number! Fifty-three bright light spots? How come?]

[I have no more than fifty-two Dream Origin Stage disciples in total now!]

[Who is the fifty-third?]

He didn't hesitate. He flew up, moved over to the trees, and checked on the disciples one by one. He decided to find that fifty-third disciple.

Finally, when he got close to the brightest spot, he was so astonished that he nearly fell to the ground.

It was Ye Chongxiao!

The brightest light spot was actually Ye Chongxiao's!

He was only in Spirit Origin Stage! How could he reflect even stronger light in the moonlight? [This is even stronger than my second disciple, who is in level eight of Dream Origin Stage!]

[What went wrong?]

[Is Ye Chongxiao insane, or have I lost my mind?]

Xiao Mufei was totally lost in the strong wind at night.

"Master, what's wrong?" A few disciples flew over to him and looked at him.

"It's fine. I am fine. Nothing wrong. Why are you looking at me. Go focus on cultivating." Xiao Mufei felt embarrassed. He decided to scold the several disciples so as to cover his embarrassment.

Suddenly, a slim figure moved fast to him. "Father, what... Why did you drop down from up there? What happened to you?"

It was Xiao Rongrong.

Xiao Mufei felt embarrassed, but he wouldn't scold his daughter. He said, "I am fine. Cough. I slipped. That's why. No big deal."

The others were speechless.

[Come on. With your power, I don't think you would slip on that tree!]

[What is this?]

Xiao Mufei was complaining in his mind. [Ye Chongxiao, you are my bad luck. Look what a fool you made me. How do I look at my daughter with confidence now!]

The next day.

Prime Master Yue Changtian read Xiao Mufei's new message: "Ye Chongxiao has been acting too fierce. Within half a day, he has swept all level seven Spirit Origin Stage disciple and started the battles against level eight disciples. By now, there are over forty level eight disciples who fell under his attacks. Should we stop him?"

Yue Changtian was speechless when he read the messages.

[How many days has he stayed in the sect? When he got here, he was no higher than level four of Spirit Origin Stage. Before everybody's eyes, under the moonlight, he just jumped up one level. Well, maybe he had been at the top of level four for a long time and happened to upgrade when the moonlight shined on him. That is reasonable. It is a fair explanation only.]

After three months of training, Ye Xiao became level six. In two months, he got two levels upgrade! That might not sound stunning to others, but as the Prime Master, Yue Changtian knew it was more than astonishing!

Chapter 853: The Ground Competition for Prime Disciple Honor!

[The special training leaves no time for cultivation. Whoever takes the training has to fight the horrible training program. The training is designed to strengthen the disciple's cultivation foundation. Usually, the disciple would consume too much of his energy because of the difficult challenges after the training was done, and he should be a little weakened in cultivation because of that. However, Ye Chongxiao didn't get weakened. Instead, he broke through two levels. Isn't it weird? Hmm. He has eaten the inner core of Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. His cultivation increased automatically. That makes sense though.]

[In the ground competition, what we want is to let him get beaten several times so that he won't become too arrogant. Unexpectedly, he knocked down all the disciples in the same level with him... He even broke through one level up in the fight...]

[Is that an accidental breakthrough? That's nonsense... Maybe it is an abrupt rise out of the accumulated strength. But shouldn't it just rise for once? How come he could go on rising up after breaking through to level seven...]

[He is now knocking down all level eight disciples... He is only level seven...]

[What is wrong with it?]

Yue Changtian wanted to figure it out, but he couldn't think of any possibility!

The next morning, before midnight.

Xiao Mufei sent a message to Yue Changtian again as usual. "So far, eighteen level nine Spirit Origin Stage disciples were defeated. Ye Chongxiao has reached the top of level seven of Spirit Origin Stage. I think he is going to reach level eight very soon."

Yue Changtian was shocked!

[What is wrong with it? Why is it so fast?]

[A level seven cultivator defeats a level nine cultivator. That isn't so shocking. But he defeated a group of level nine disciples! That is shocking! He has just reached level seven yesterday! Now he is going to reach level eight soon? What the hell is that? Another abrupt rise?]

[Bullsh*t!]

However, two days later, something even more like "bullsh*t" happened.

"Ye Chongxiao has reached level eight! All level nine disciples are knocked down. A moment ago, the prime Spirit Origin Stage disciple of my group, Cheng Feiyu, was defeated within five attacks from Ye Chongxiao!"

"The new prime Spirit Origin Stage disciple of my team is now Ye Chongxiao. Prime Master, please arrange Ye Chongxiao's combat for prime Spirit Origin Stage disciple of the sect."

Yue Changtian's face was twisting when he read this message!

[Three days!]

[No. Less than three days! That guy snatch the seat of the prime disciple!]

The leadership of the sect had been waiting to hear how Ye Chongxiao got beaten up and worked harder on cultivation after the combats. However, he didn't even get slapped on the face. All he did was to punch others again and again.

He defeated all the disciples of Xiao Mufei in a devastating way.

The best Spirit Origin Stage disciple of Xiao Mufei, Cheng Feiyu, only held it for five attacks. That was all! The end!

"Ye Chongxiao can join the competition for the honor of prime Spirit Origin Stage disciple of the sect. He can start a combat

anytime he wants!"

Yue Changtian gave the order without any hesitation.

Ye Xiao spent half of the night resting. The next morning, he went to the competition ground of the sect.

Spirit Origin Stage disciples from different groups were gathering there.

There were over three hundred men.

"Cold Moon Palace, the twelfth branch, thirty-ninth subbranch, first group, Ye Chongxiao, officially joins the ground competition for prime disciple honor!"

Ye Xiao was confused by the long introduction too.

Xiao Mufei was the master of the thirty-ninth subbranch in the twelfth branch. Fang Dalong was the first group. Ye Chongxiao was Fang Dalong's only disciple. It was roughly like that.

In fact, this showed the huge size of the force in Cold Moon Palace!

Anyone of the Spirit Origin Stage disciples could be invincible in the Land of Han-Yang. However, in Cold Moon Palace, they were the weakest league. Even so, the prime disciple of each group had to defeat hundreds of people. There were so many disciples in Cold Moon Palace in total!

It was a horrible force!

Ye Xiao walked into the ground after the introduction. Suddenly, he found himself standing on a moonlit path.

The path was apparently the stage. Ye Xiao could start a battle on this stage, or wait for others to challenge him.

It was the stage of winners!

At this moment, countless eyes stared at him.

In those eyes, there was surging fighting spirit!

The disciples in this place were all winners of their own group. They all had superior power to defeat their disciple brothers in the same cultivation stage!

However, Ye Xiao just ignored them. He closed his eyes and showed an extremely arrogant face. He simply just looked down upon all the others.

He was trying to piss the other disciples.

He didn't want to ask everyone for a fight!

That would be exhausting and boring!

It tired him to talk too much.

It was better to enrage the others so that they would come over to fight him! That was a great idea!

As expected, after a simple move, the disciples were all furious!

[You, a level eight disciple, luckily became the winner of your group. How dare you show your stupid arrogance to us?]

[We are all peak level nine Spirit Origin Stage cultivators. We wouldn't be so arrogant!]

[What an ignorant prick!]

[A frog in the bottom of a well knows little of the immensity of heaven!]

[Somebody has to give him a lesson!]

[Punch him!]

[Beat him up!]

All the other disciples were pissed. They stared at Ye Xiao with flames of fury in their eyes.

Everybody read his name 'Ye Chongxiao' many times in the mind!

It wasn't a secret to the leadership that Ye Xiao accidentally ate

the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish.

However, it was top secret for the bottommost disciples.

None of the disciples below Dream Origin Stage knew Ye Chongxiao's history.

"Ye Chongxiao!" A disciple with a strong body stood up. He was sneering, "I am the prime Spirit Origin Stage disciple of the second group, 23rd subbranch in the 15th branch, Song Chenglun! Please accept my challenge!"

Ye Xiao humphed. He arrogantly stood up and then prepared to walk off the stage. He blandly said, "One strike!"

Song Chenglun was furious. He shouted and then rushed over to Ye Xiao.

After that, suddenly, Song Chenglun flew away fast.

Only those who had real sharp eyes noticed that Ye Chongxiao had just moved one foot to casual kick Song Chenglun...

It was too fast, almost invisible. It was difficult to describe how fast was!

Song Chenglun didn't have time to react. He flew away dozens of meters until he hit the floor.

The others saw this and felt like Ye Xiao was a wolf in a flock of sheep!

...

Chapter 854: Devastating!

Everybody stood up.

"Oh? So that is what a prime disciple look like? It's much better to see it than to just hear it!" Ye Xiao blandly said.

He was obviously trying to arouse more fury among the crowd. He was afraid they would stop challenging him. After a while, he just started to sneer at them all at the same time. "Well if you are all just like him, why don't you just come together. It is wasting my time to fight you one by one. Let's just get this done. I am quite busy. I don't have much time to waste..."

After that, he didn't leave the stage. He just stood there arrogantly, looking up, ignoring everybody else.

He was waiting for people to challenge him!

One after another, those disciples kept going up to fight him and got defeated as expected...

Ye Xiao kept fighting them from the morning to lunchtime. He had knocked down one hundred and twenty-seven men in total.

In the end, the other stages were empty. Everybody was waiting to fight Ye Chongxiao!

People started to stand in line...

The disciples knew that Ye Chongxiao was powerful enough to be so arrogant. He had defeated so many prime disciples after all. He was very likely the best Spirit Origin Stage disciple in the sect. However, because he was so arrogant and shameless, they decided not to just let him go easy. They were not allowed to kill others, but they figured one by one, they would make Ye Chonxiao exhausted at the end!

All Spirit Origin Stage disciples in the sect worked together to fight against Ye Xiao!

However, in Ye Xiao's eyes, they were simply wasting time. The disciples were standing in line waiting to improve his cultivation capability and help him breakthrough!

In fact, it was Ye Xiao who would make the others exhausted at the end!

He didn't want the disciples back off, so he talked even worse to them...

"Are you really level nine? Are you sure?"

"I am only level eight!"

"How can you be so weak? That's unbelievable!"

"You are actually the prime disciples in your groups? Are you sure you didn't cheat?"

"You really don't deserve your title."

"Is anybody stronger than this fool?"

"Is there anybody who can stand here any longer?"

"Anybody else?"

"Who's next?"

"Next!"

...

Zhan Yunfei and one other disciple were the judges.

His eyes turned red.

[He is totally insane! He swept down half of the hundreds of prime disciples in the morning!]

It was the resounding "Disciple of Fang Dalong, Ye Chong Xiao the winner"!

Zhan Yunfei was so jealous at the moment.

[Why not just assign this monster to my group...]

[Xiao Mufei and Fang Dalong took all the fame...]

[God damn it! This is not fair!]

The next moment, Zhan Yunfei was stunned.

Ye Chongxiao was having the last fight. Suddenly, Zhan Yunfei shouted, "Wait! This is not right!"

The other judge smiled and said, "He fought the others one by one. Ye Chongxiao accepted the challenge from others. There is no suppression. What is not right?"

Zhan Yunfei took a breath. "Absolutely wrong! Ye Chongxiao... Since he began the first combat, he hasn't rested at all! He has been fighting till now! That means he..."

The other judge was Zhu Jiutian, who was known as Zhan Yunfei's partner. The two of them were known as Cold Moon's Twin Wings! Zhu Jiutian was enlightened. He took in a cold breath and said, "That's true... He... He is invincible among the Spirit Origin Stage disciples!"

Zhan Yunfei said, "That's the truth. He defeated over a hundred other prime disciples in a row. That proves his victory already!"

"He is much stronger than the others. Why is he still arousing other's anger? Why does he keep fighting against the others? Isn't it a waste of time?"

Zhan Yunfei was confused.

Suddenly, he heard Ye Xiao shouting, "Such as it is!"

The disciple who fought him rolled away like a ball the next moment.

It was silent!

Something happened on Ye Chongxiao!

Ye Chongxiao was shouting, facing up to the sky. His voice was getting louder and louder. In the end, it sounded like a

thunderstrike!

At the end of the shout, suddenly there was a sound of explosion!

"He actually broke through again!"

Zhan Yunfei sighed. "So he kept fighting the others without any rest because he wanted to use the disciples to push himself into a moment of breakthrough. He reached level nine of Spirit Origin Stage now! If the other disciples were stronger, he should have broken through much earlier!"

Zhu Jiutian was stunned as if he had seen a god. After a while, he grabbed Zhan Yunfei's arm and said, "Old Zhan, are you sure he was only level four when you first saw him? How long has it been since then? Half year?"

Zhan Yunfei humphed, showing no expression on the face.

"What a genius!" Zhu Jiutian looked at Zhan Yunfei in the way he looked at a fool. "I mean, Zhan, you seem to be a smart guy in the old days. How could you make such a big mistake? If I were you, I would definitely recruit him as soon as I saw him... Why did you let him go?"

Zhan Yunfei turned around with a dark face, looking at Zhu Jiutian and blandly said, "Zhu Jiutian, keep going with it. One more word, we are done!"

Zhu Jiutian was surprised. He murmured, "What? Why? Do you want me to go on or do you want me to stop? I am confused."

Ye Chongxiao broke through to another level during the combats against all the other prime Spirit Origin Stage disciples!

He stood at the center. The qi around him was still floating. Everybody was focusing on him right now.

It was unusual thing to see a disciple breakthrough in combat, but people still had seen some. However, if there was anybody who broke through to a new level after a long time of fighting against

over a hundred cultivators... Ye Chongxiao was the first!

That was it!

When Yue Changtian got the message, he was checking on his fish.

"It's getting less. Why... Well, it is getting slower though. Is this a good news... I don't know..." He was confused.

The truth was... Erhuo had been eating his fish for over four months... It truly was fed up with the fish.

No matter how delicious the fish were, it ate it everyday. Now it had gotten enough!

Erhuo started to look for something new. That was why the fish were reduced slower...

"Ye Chongxiao broke through to level nine of Spirit Origin Stage in the fight! He defeated all the other prime disciples in the ground competition for prime disciple honor..." Yue Changtian's hand was shaking when he read the message.

...

Chapter 855: Ground Competition of Dream Origin Stage

Although Yue Changtian knew that Ye Chongxiao would definitely give a shockingly wonderful performance in the competition, he never expected that it would go this far.

Within five days.

He reached level nine from level seven!

That was a legend!

That was a myth!

It was unbelievable. However, that was what happened...

In the afternoon, Ye Xiao swept down all the so-called prime disciples like a whirlwind blowing away dust on the floor!

He defeated every single one of them!

The next three days, he was totally free.

He had defeated all Spirit Origin Stage disciples. Even though he wanted to fight, there was nobody he could fight anymore. What else could he do other than simply enjoying the leisure time?

He just hung around and did some cultivation from time to time. He would spend two hours in the ground competition every day.

He would gather those disciples who caught up and wanted to challenge him, and then knock them down as soon as he could. After that, he would left and focus on his own cultivation again...

Ye Xiao's surprising performance made the other disciples feel stressed and upset.

Nobody ever dared to question his power now. There were only some people moaning how unlucky to be in the same generation with such a great figure!

There were many talented disciples who had been waiting for a long time to show themselves in front of the elders.

However, Ye Chongxiao was too good. He left no chance for the others to show themselves.

They were all so weak... What they could show was only embarrassment!

"Ye Chongxiao has reached the peak of Spirit Origin Stage group. He will not join any combat in the competition for Spirit Origin Stage. We shall follow the rules and let Ye Chongxiao fight in the combats of level one and two of Dream Origin Stage!"

Yue Changtian made the order when he knew Ye Chongxiao had reached level nine.

First of all, he had defeated all the prime Spirit Origin Stage disciples. He was definitely the best among all Spirit Origin Stage disciples. Nobody questioned that. He had the qualification to challenge the higher level combats.

Besides, time was passing. It couldn't be delayed anymore.

The truth was all the good disciples were defeated by Ye Chongxiao!

As long as Ye Chongxiao stayed there, the other Spirit Origin Disciples would never have the chance to show themselves.

That meant only the first place was respected. Second and third places had lost the value they should have. Under the shining glow of the wonderful Ye Chongxiao, the others were dim and hopeless!

Ye Chongxiao had crushed all the others' confidence!

Completely broken!

Now the talented disciples were all suffering self-contemptuousness!

They all had similar thoughts about themselves. "Was I too arrogant? Am I totally garbage?"

That was not a good sign for the sect.

It was good for a cultivator to be calm and self-reflective, however, if a cultivator lost the pride and self-esteem, they were doomed.

Ye Chongxiao was like an extremely bright full moon shining in the sky.

The stars around him were all dim and somber.

For the sect, it was good that they had such a great disciple, but it was also bad that other disciples were frustrated!

No matter how powerful Ye Chongxiao was, he could never replace the roles of all the other disciples!

Maybe he could in the future, but absolutely not yet!

Yue Changtian saw the consequence out of it, so he made the decision promptly!

It didn't violate the rules to let Ye Chongxiao join the competition of those in Dream Origin Stage. In fact, Yue Changtian wanted him to get beaten in the higher level combats!

If Ye Chongxiao kept overwhelming all the other disciples, it would not be good for the disciples, also not good for Ye Chongxiao himself either.

He might lose a healthy and humble mindset.

Thus, Ye Xiao was arranged to fight in the ground competition of Dream Origin Stage.

He would fight against disciples in level one of Dream Origin Stage.

He had the first several battles back in Xiao Mufei's group.

Xiao Mufei was interested in it. Those disciples who came back with Ye Xiao months earlier were interested too. They all watched the combat, waiting to see how Ye Chongxiao would get punched.

They even felt it a pity that they couldn't fight him themselves. If they were in a lower level, they could have the wonderful experience of beating a monster genius disciple up. They kept picturing how Ye Chongxiao would be punched hard and felt good about it!

"Knock him down! Li Feng, it will be such a disgrace to lose the fight to him! If you lose it, don't tell anybody you know me..."

"That's right! Beat him hard! Punch him right there! Just don't hurt his bones..."

The Dream Origin Stage disciples of Xiao Mufei who were familiar to Ye Xiao crowded around to watch Ye Xiao fight. In fact, they were here to see how Ye Xiao would get punched.

The entire place was busy like a market.

However, as the fight started, the crowd suddenly fell into silence.

Because... what happened was too unbelievably astonishing.

Ye Chongxiao had just entered level nine of Spirit Origin Stage, but they actually fought evenly. They were both attacking fiercely and nobody was losing.

In fact, Ye Chongxiao controlled the pace of the fight!

"What the hell? How is this possible?" Everybody was shocked.

Level nine of Spirit Origin Stage and level one of Dream Origin Stage, there seemed to be only one level difference, but in fact, everybody knew, it was a huge gap!

No matter how good a level nine Spirit Origin Stage cultivator was, he was not a Dream Origin Stage cultivator!

That was a huge difference!

There used to be some talented disciples who also joined the competition of Dream Origin Stage as a Spirit Origin Stage prime disciple, but none of them ever won a combat after that. No Spirit

Origin Stage disciples could actually fight against a Dream Origin Stage disciple!

Ye Chongxiao was a talented disciple who was in level nine of Spirit Origin Stage, but he had just reached level nine. He hasn't reached the peak of level nine. He wasn't even beyond the initial phase of level nine. He should be greatly weaker than a Dream Origin Stage cultivator for sure!

No matter how talented Ye Chongxiao was, it was impossible that he could fight a Dream Origin Stage disciple evenly!

He should just be humbly beaten!

He should just stand there and get punched!

He should get beaten up all the way along until he became a Dream Origin Stage cultivator too.

...

Chapter 856: Next!

In fact, Ye Xiao was taking the initiative.

He was gradually sharpening his attacks so as to take charge of the combat.

As the fight went on, it wasn't even anymore.

Ye Chongxiao was attacking fiercely while Li Feng could only try his best to defend the attacks. He couldn't even fight back.

Gradually, Ye Chongxiao's attack was becoming like storms...

- Boom! -

The fight was over. Li Feng was kicked away and flew out dozens of meters until he hit a big tree. Otherwise, he would fly out even further.

The big tree shook, and leaves fell down to the ground. That was just like the falling jaws of the crowd.

They were totally shocked.

They looked at Ye Xiao as if he was a monster!

Even Li Feng, who just got up on the floor, stared at Ye Xiao in surprise. He couldn't believe it. He was still confused too. [How did I lose it? How come I got defeated by a Spirit Origin Stage cultivator?]

They were shocked. They didn't believe it. No matter what they thought or what they felt, the truth was before their eyes!

"Next!" Xiao Mufei felt quite ashamed. He hurriedly shouted for the next battle to begin.

[This is embarrassing. My Dream Origin Stage disciple actually lost the combat!]

[This is... unbelievable...]

[No. I have to end this quick. I must let the young man get beaten

down hard on the floor quickly. Otherwise, this is going to be really nasty!]

In fact, there used to be a few Spirit Origin Stage disciples who had won the first combat when they joined the upper-grade competition. It was like Ye Chongxiao, but in a much difficult way!

However, none of them won the second combat! They all got beaten up again and again facing all the other Dream Origin Stage disciples!

It was designed to give the prime disciple a lesson, so as to teach him to stay humble! It was an honor!

As Xiao Mufei called the name, another level one Dream Origin Stage disciple got on the stage. However, this one lost it even faster.

After the time it took for an incense stick to burn, the second one was kicked away too.

"Next!" Xiao Mufei was utterly discomfited.

[You can defeat one or two of my men. Fine. What about the third and the fourth? Can you defeat them all? I have lots of level one Dream Origin Stage disciples!

...

"Level two, go!"

[Fine... You defeated all my level one disciples. So what? Do you think you can defeat my level two disciples?]

...

"Next!"

...

"You bunch of useless garbages! Next!"

...

That night, Yue Changtian got a new message. "Ye Chongxiao

won all the twenty-eight combats against the level one and two disciples of Dream Origin Stage. He is now the prime disciple of the thirty-ninth subbranch in the twelfth branch."

"What the..." Yue Changtian was stunned.

[This message can't be faked, right?]

[A level nine Spirit Origin Stage disciple defeated twenty-eight Dream Origin Stage disciples in a row and became the prime disciple?]

[How... How is that possible?]

Yue Changtian read the message over and over again. In the end, he believed it was true.

He left those fish and went to the mountaintop.

"Grandmasters... Your... Your disciple... He is totally insane... Ah... What.. What happened... Are you the three grandmasters?" Yue Changtian saw the three old men, but he talked like he saw a ghost.

As the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace, he surely had a pair of sharp eyes. In Cold Moon Palace, he knew the three grandmaster better than anybody else. About one month earlier, he had seen the three old men. He knew the three old men had been pouring their life energy into Ye Chongxiao's body so as to refine his physical condition. They should be dying right now. However, the three grandmasters in front of Yue Changtian were so energetic and vigorous, although they were appeared like three ancient men!

[What is going on?]

[Is this the last radiance of the setting sun?]

[It doesn't look like so!]

[What is it then? Is there any possible explanation for this?]

Yue Changtian didn't finish the words he originally wanted to say and instead said some nonsensical words. The three old men knew

what was happening. They knew Yue Changtian was shocked because he knew they were dying. How could he not be surprised?

Lei Dadi laughed and said, "Boy, what are you talking about? You are not making sense here. If we are not who we are, who are we? Listen to you. You are the Prime Master of our sect. How come you never show yourself as someone calm and steady. You are worse than our little disciple on this. Isn't it embarrassing?"

When he was talking, his voice was loud and resounding. One month before this, he appeared to be extremely weak due to the loss of life energy. Now, Yue Changtian felt that his cultivation was so profound and deep. Finally, he understood. With respect he said, "Congratulations, grandmasters. Your life energy is recovered. It is a great fortune of our sect!"

Yue Changtian was being sincere. Without the three grandmasters, Cold Moon Palace would be weakened badly, just like the Misty Cloud Palace without Xuan Bing. He didn't know what extended the three old men's lives, but he knew that was the truth. As the Prime Master of the sect, he was surely happy to know it! Suddenly, he felt less burden on his shoulders!

Feng Wuying said, "Okay. Just stop that now. A full mouth of flattering words. Boring. It is a pleasant thing. After what you said, it becomes so boring. Stick to the real business. Just tell me what do you want. Is your Disciple Brother Ye in trouble?"

Yue Changtian was embarrassed. He then smiled bitterly. "He is truly outstanding. He is in Spirit Origin Stage, but already defeated Dream Origin Stage disciples... That..."

The three grandmasters had been shocked over and over again by Ye Chongxiao during the three months. Apparently, they had gotten used to it. None of them showed any special expressions.

Yun Piaoliu spoke with indifference, "So what? Do you need to exclaim and yell like this? Do you know you are the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace? Can't you just be calm and steady? He is my

disciple. Of course he is outstanding! He surely should win! Do you think he should get beaten? Tortured? Punched? Again and again..."

Yue Changtian was surprised. He didn't know what to say anymore.

[How can the three grandmasters stay so calm?]

[Shouldn't they at least feel surprised?]

...

Chapter 857: Can't Stop Feeling Relaxed!

[Does it mean... Grandmasters know what would happen from the beginning?]

[Holy heavens. What is going on recently? Weird things happened one after another! Can't anything be normal again?]

"Changtian, look, as long as you spend long enough time with the boy, you will find..." Yun Piaoliu sighed and said, "There is no common sense that can apply on him. Any surprising things can happen. Anything is possible. When the moonlight shined on him the other day, we should have known it. What you said are just a few combats. It really doesn't mean anything!"

Yue Changtian didn't know what to say. "..."

"Forget it. Let me show you something much more astonishing." Lei Dadi gave him a small book.

It was the record of Ye Xiao in the three months.

Yue Changtian knew that Ye Chongxiao had finished all the three months training. He was shocked, but didn't know the details.

After all, there used to be some disciples who finished the training with others' help.

Ye Chongxiao might be a few challenges ahead of others, but he might have used some help from the grandmasters. That wouldn't be so shocking.

He already shocked everybody when the moonlight shined on him. He was supposed to show something great in the three months training after all!

However, when Yue Changtian read the first page of that small book, he was stunned. He stood up fast and widely opened his eyes.

"Grandmasters... Is this real? You didn't fake it, did you?"

When he asked the question, he felt the goosebumps on himself.

He was stunned. He was shocked! He was astonished!

It was only the record on the first page.

Not that Yue Changtian was easy to be shocked, but what he read on the first page was truly unbelievable. It was about the first challenge. In the challenge, the disciple in the training should be weighed 2500 kilograms in total. Ye Chongxiao wore 1750 kilograms clothes and carried a 750 kilograms bucket. Under such circumstances, the best record in history was carrying the water eight times back to the vat. Nobody had ever done a ninth time. Ye Chongxiao finished ten times, and even did an eleventh! That meant he totally carried the water back to the vat eleven times!

That was such a horrible record!

Lei Dadi knew Yue Changtian would ask question about it, so he looked at Yue Changtian and gave him a hint. "Go on. Read the rest. Ask all the questions at the end."

Apparently, they knew Yue Changtian would have such a reaction.

[You think this is shocking? Naive. This is far from the real shocking stuff. You will sweat for it!]

Yue Changtian did sweat when he read half of the book. His hands were shaking too.

As Lei Dadi thought, he sweated!

Lei Dadi looked at him and said, "How is it? He can create such a record. Not to mention he just defeated some Dream Origin Stage disciples, even if you told me he defeated you, I won't be surprised!"

Yue Changtian was sweating. He nodded and said, "Me neither..."

After reading the small book of records, he left the mountaintop.

At this moment, he suddenly felt... that... what he had said the other day... might really come true someday?

[Maybe... this will be a real Saint in the history of Cold Moon Palace!]

He suddenly felt regret about something!

[My fish... What a waste... If I gave all my fish to Ye Chongxiao, he will definitely be much stronger... If only I did!] He felt so upset about it. [If he can get enough support... maybe we will meet our real Saint sooner...]

...

Yue Changtian suddenly started to support Ye Chongxiao without telling anybody the reason. Because of that, Ye Xiao got into the competition for Dream Origin Stage first grade prime disciple!

"Cold Moon Palace, 12th branch, 39th subbranch disciple, Ye Chongxiao, joins the ground competition for Dream Origin Stage first grade prime disciple!"

The news spread fast in the sect.

He didn't need to be introduced as the disciple of the 'first group' this time.

That was such a huge upgrade.

Ye Xiao had fought his easy way to this stage. Now he started to feel the stress.

In other words, from now on, he might get himself beaten hard!

The Dream Origin Stage disciples from different subbranches were all outstanding figures indeed. Each of them had their own specialties.

Ye Xiao was still much weaker than Dream Origin Stage cultivators. What he could do was to win the fight with combat skills.

However, those disciples he was going to fight were all experienced cultivators. They were all good at combat skills too.

Otherwise, how could they become elites in their groups.

Besides, Ye Xiao couldn't show his secret capability yet.

In the Land of Han-Yang, he could use the martial arts of Xiao Monarch as he wished. People in Land of the Han-Yang barely knew about it after all. However, before he was strong enough, he couldn't show even a bit of those martial arts.

And he was inside one of the three factions, wasn't he?

The three months special training had made his tenacity improve to a horrible extent. It was more possible that he would persist when more people thought he would give up.

When his enemy was underestimating him, he would make a final counterattack to win the combat!

He did it once, twice... He kept doing it in the fights...

It was so confusing for others.

There was a young talented disciple who was defeated by Ye Xiao that was now surrounded by other people.

"Are you a fool? Tell me! Are you stupid?" somebody scolded at him. "You saw those people before you make the same mistake! They lost it because they underestimated that man when he looked exhausted! Why did you make the same mistake when you obviously knew it was wrong to underestimate him?"

"Over a dozen failures occurred before you, yet you actually learned nothing? Can't you just be sober?"

It was that talented disciple's master. He was being so strict to the young man. In fact, he wished he could slap on that young man's face.

He was totally pissed.

"I didn't want that either..." The level two Dream Origin Stage disciple felt terribly wronged. "At the end of the fight, I thought Ye Chongxiao was definitely exhausted... I could definitely put him

down with one finger... It was impossible for him to defend my attack! I knew you all thought so... I just didn't know he actually fought back..."

...

Chapter 858: Peerless Genius Is a Threat!

"I have been warning myself to be cautious. I knew I should not underestimate him. I fought with extreme caution... but in the end, I truly felt I was definitely winning it. I can't stop feeling relaxed at that moment..."

"I truly couldn't loosen my alert!"

It was all the defeated disciples' thought.

One talented disciple asked his master after that.

"Master, if you fight somebody and you are sure your enemy is dead, would you feel relaxed a bit?"

"That's what Ye Chongxiao let me feel. At that moment, it felt so real that he was just a dead body! I was so sure I was the winner... How could I not feel relaxed at that particular moment?"

"But within that moment, he actually made an attack. He isn't a human being. He is a monster! He is a freak! He is an undead monster..."

That was so astonishing.

That was right. Who would not lose vigilance when the enemy was dead?

However, Ye Xiao made people feel he was like a dead man, because he wanted that particular moment to make a final strike! One strike, he could win the combat!

Most importantly, everybody proved that he didn't play any dirty tricks in the fight!

Everybody believed that he had been exhausted before he won the fight!

It had been one full day.

Ye Xiao had been through thirty combats. Every combat, he was

seriously hurt. However, he won every combat he was in!

The last combat, when he was standing on the stage with blood all over his body, the opponent, a level two Dream Origin Stage disciple, gave up!

"I give up, not because I am weaker in cultivation or combat skills, but because I can't comfort my weeping heart. I know if I have fought thirty combats in a row like Disciple Brother Ye, I would definitely fail. I can't even do two combats in a day!"

"I give up on this. When you are ready tomorrow, when you are recovered, I will challenge you once again!"

Ye Xiao nodded with a smile.

He suddenly waved his arms. A bright moonlight rushed up from the ground to the sky. Endless spiritual qi kept entering his body under the shining glow. Ye Xiao's body suddenly became bright like the moon.

A bright moon actually showed up beyond his head!

It was a full moon!

The others felt like in a weird dream. They suddenly felt that things didn't look real anymore!

"Did he break through again?"

Zhan Yunfei looked at Ye Xiao. He was frightened.

That's right. He was frightened! There was fear in his eyes!

He was totally scared!

Zhan Yunfei had fought thousands of battles. Even when he was fighting against Xiao Monarch, risking his life, he never felt scared. However, at this moment, as he looked at the young disciple who had just been recruited half a year earlier, he was scared!

[Did he just break through after the combat?]

He couldn't stop feeling scared!

When he met Ye Chongxiao, the latter was only level four of Spirit Origin Stage.

When Ye Chongxiao came to the sect and the moonlight shined on him, he became level five.

After the special training, he became level six.

In the first day of the ground competition, he became level seven! The next day, he became level eight!

Two days after, he became level nine!

Now, on the seventh day since the competition started, he broke through Spirit Origin Stage and reached Dream Origin Stage!

That was too fast. Nobody had even heard of such an unbelievable story in a myth!

It had never happened!

Most importantly, they knew Ye Chongxiao had never taken any pills to increase his cultivation!

The only thing that could increase his cultivation slowly was the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. Even with that inner core, it was impossible to upgrade so fast.

After all, it was impossible for him to activate the power of the inner core yet!

What made him so unbelievable? He could do this because he was talented and he never gave up!

This moment, silence filled the entire Cold Moon Palace!

All the member of the leadership came over hurriedly.

They looked at the young man in the center of the ground. None of them said anything. In their eyes, there were inspiration, hope and heaviness.

They all had the same thought.

As long as this young man keep improving like that, Cold Moon Palace would rise soon, under his guidance!

If he kept going fast like that, it would take him less than fifty years to reach the top of Dao Origin Stage!

Once he reached that level, he could even defeat the most powerful figure in the martial world easily!

When that day came, Cold Moon Palace would be the most powerful sect in the entire realm!

However, Ye Chongxiao was not that powerful yet!

In other words, the next fifty years was the most dangerous period of time for Ye Chongxiao. It was the easiest to kill him during the fifty years!

For Cold Moon Palace, it was definitely a must-do to give Ye Chongxiao a fifty years of safety!

On the contrary, the other sects would definitely try whatever they could to kill him if they knew his existence!

Cold Moon Palace had to protect him for fifty years... How many people would have to die for him?

It could be everybody.

Everybody was thrilled!

A peerless genius was an honor, a great opportunity, also a fate to the sect. However, it was also a threat!

He would be a threat to his own sect, also the entire martial world!

The young man became the focal point of everybody's sight!

Only superior cultivators knew that this young man was actually the focal point of the entire world!

There were tens of thousands of disciples who had seen this. It was impossible to keep this a secret. Somebody would leak it out

sooner or later!

That was for sure.

After Ye Xiao reached level one of Dream Origin Stage, there was no more a huge gap between him and the opponent when he was fighting another Dream Origin Stage disciple. It wouldn't take a long time to finish the fight anymore. He wouldn't need to get himself hurt so bad anymore. In the combats after he broke through to a new stage, he kept winning it!

None of the disciples under level three of Dream Origin Stage could possibly defeat him anymore!

For three days, Ye Chongxiao had become a nightmare to all the disciples under level two of Dream Origin Stage.

Many disciples who had fought Ye Xiao before he broke through felt lucky that they didn't need to fight him again. They did lose the combats, but they had beaten Ye Chongxiao real hard after all. Those who fought Ye Xiao after he broke through could not even hurt him a bit. In fact, they wouldn't have the chance to even touch him again!

All the disciples in low levels of Dream Origin Stage had the same thought!

They were all proud and arrogant men in the sect. After they had experienced Ye Chongxiao's horrible power, they were no more arrogant and proud.

In fact, Yue Changtian was quite confused when he saw what happened.

...

Chapter 859: Training Partner!

Ye Xiao could totally defeat any low level Dream Origin Stage disciples. Yue Changtian wasn't surprised when he got the report. He wasn't surprised that he could easily sweep all the low level Dream Origin Stage disciples too.

But what should he do about it?

Should he arrange Ye Chongxiao to fight the second grade Dream Origin Stage ground competition? That meant he would need to fight the disciples in level three and level four.

He was talented and full of potential. It was foreseeable that he could be invincible among the level one Dream Origin Stage disciples after he reached to the new stage. However, none of the level two disciples could defeat him either. That was unbelievable!

However, Yue Changtian couldn't just put him into the fights of the level three and level four disciples. It didn't break the rules, but... it was totally a different power level.

Initial levels and middle levels had a huge gap. It might not be bigger than the difference between two stages, but it was also times difference!

No matter how good he was, he might get himself killed when challenging the upper level cultivators.

Disciples at level three and level four of Dream Origin Stage were always unstable in terms of cultivation foundation. It was hard for them to control their powers freely. They would usually make bigger damage than they expected. If Ye Chongxiao fought against them, they might lose control of their power and accidentally kill the peerless genius of the sect.

However, he was already invincible in the same grade. If he didn't go on and challenge stronger opponents, he might become too arrogant!

[What should I do?]

He was scratching his head. He had become the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace for so many years, but this was the first time he felt so troubled.

However, he was a thoughtful and tactful man after all.

"Let's do this then..." Yue Changtian talked to Zhan Yunfei, "Arrange a few disciples who are in level five or six of Dream Origin Stage. Tell them to fight Chongxiao several times... so as to refine his combat skills."

Zhan Yunfei immediately understood it. His eyes lit up.

Yue Changtian's idea was to temporarily draw Chongxiao out of the ground competition. It would protect the other talented disciples' self-esteem. Besides, it could improve Chongxiao's combat skills fast. It was such a good plan...

Zhan Yunfei slapped on the leg and said, "What a cunning, tactful, wise, scheming Prime Master... I can never think of such a brilliant idea..."

"Piss off!"

Yue Changtian kicked him.

[Are you praising me? You are humiliating me! Aren't you?]

Zhan Yunfei left.

Ye Xiao was stuck in a fight. He was fighting against another genius disciple, who was mostly close to level three of Dream Origin Stage. If Ye Xiao was still in Spirit Origin Stage, he would be knocked down easily like a dog sh*t. However, now it was a totally different story. Under Ye Xiao's continuous attacks, that genius was having a tough time defending himself. His clothes were in a mess and there were some finger marks on his face too.

Apparently, he had suffered enough.

Ye Xiao actually showed him lots of respect already!

While Ye Xiao was fighting against the others, he felt his own cultivation was improving. Some martial art techniques he learned in the previous life were coming back to his head and were then mixed with the Cold Moon Palace martial arts...

The longer he fought, the stronger he became. Nobody could see through his movements.

There were even some Dao Origin Stage disciples watching him fight. In fact, they were not just watching the combats. They were observing Ye Xiao's every movement... They wanted to see something that they could learn from him.

They wouldn't agree if it was that they wanted to learn from Ye Xiao.

They would say... analyze his martial arts!

In fact, every movement Ye Xiao made in the fights was a new understanding to the origin principles of the Cold Moon Palace martial arts. It broke the old rules and gave the martial arts some new energy.

At this moment, nobody cared about how miserable the genius Ye Xiao was beating, instead, they wanted Ye Xiao to keep beating that poor disciple!

[Let him do all those movements! I want to see the new ways to operate our martial arts...]

[We don't care who is getting beaten up!]

[That's none of our business!]

Zhan Yunfei's appearance stopped the disciple from being beaten for a longer time.

"It's done. Ye Chongxiao won." With a few words, he finished the combat. That level two genius disciple suddenly lied down on the floor. He was truly exhausted at the moment. Before anybody went up to hold him, he fled away fast, as if he wanted to run away from

a horrible beast.

[Finally!]

[I will never fight that monster ever again!]

[He is not human being. He is a sick monster!]

After a while, Zhan Yunfei announced the Prime Master's decision.

"Ye Chongxiao is improving too fast. His cultivation foundation isn't strong enough. That may bring flaws to his future cultivation. The leadership decided to send two disciples beyond level five of Dream Origin Stage to be his training partners. Who... Who wants to be a training partner for him?"

For Zhan Yunfei, those who were beyond level five of Dream Origin Stage would never want to be a training partner for Ye Chongxiao, who was just level one of Dream Origin Stage, because it would be too disgraceful. They might also see this as wasting time. Zhan Yunfei worried that maybe no one would love to answer the recruitment.

He had decided that if nobody wanted to do this job, he would choose a dozen men to help Ye Chongxiao. After all, level five was so much more powerful than level one. No matter how good he was, he wouldn't be able to defeat over ten level five disciples at a time. It would be enough to train him well.

However, things were not like what he imagined. A lot of people stepped out and answered the recruitment. They all wanted to train with Ye Chongxiao.

What surprised Zhan Yunfei more was that... among those disciples, some were beyond level seven, some had even reached level nine... In fact, there were even some in Dao Origin Stage...

"Me, me, me, me..."

"I'll do it! I am free later! I can spend all my time to help him!"

"Count me in! I am free too! I will do my best to help him!"

"Me too! I have more spare time than others..."

"You must count me in! I can squeeze some time to help him! It is our duty to take care of the younger generation of the sect..."

"I will do whatever I can to take this job! You must let me get involved!"

...

A large crowd gathered over to Zhan Yunfei. Some of them even nearly started to fight each other.

Zhan Yunfei was utterly shocked.

...

Chapter 860: Visit the Qiong-Hua Palace!

"What the hell is going on?" Zhan Yunfei kept rubbing his head. He was so shocked that his nose nearly dropped down. "Is he truly this sociable now? How many days has he been here?"

He had been reporting to the Prime Master, so he didn't see how Ye Xiao fought in the combat earlier.

Ye Chongxiao was now like a huge treasure to everybody. Whoever fought against him, even just watch him fight, could learn many things about the martial arts that they couldn't figure out by themselves. Some problems they couldn't solve for a long time were sometimes easily solved because of some small moves that Ye Chongxiao did in the combat...

That was why so many superior cultivators wanted to train with Ye Chongxiao.

Zhan Yunfei was so shocked. After a while, he spoke again, "Since many of you truly care for the younger generation, I guess you can take turns to do this. I don't want this to stop you from your own schedule. That won't be good."

Everybody cheered up with big smiles.

Zhan Yunfei didn't know that this decision would cause a long term competition. This was the beginning of a huge event in history!

That event would actually make the three factions fall apart!

...

In Qiong-Hua Palace.

It was one of the most powerful forces in the world, one of the three great palaces of Qing-Yun Realm. It was located in the surroundings of mountains, which was covered by clouds and fog all year long.

According to the myths, there used to be no mountains. One day, the moon suddenly shined, and that night, the entire Qing-Yun Realm was like in day time. It kept lighting up the world a whole night.

After that night, there were suddenly mountains on the flat land. The mountains were placed in the shape of a full moon.

After that, the person who founded Qiong-Hua Palace accidentally got an ancient nook. That was the origin of Qiong-Hua Palace. After that, Qiong-Hua Palace became a powerful force in the world and shocked the entire Qing-Yun Realm by its fame, also known as the Great Qiong-Hua Palace.

The Full-moon Mountains were surrounded by fogs and clouds.

The fog seemed to contain pure spiritual qi. Breathing once would make anyone feel refreshed. That was why the disciples in Qiong-Hua Palace always improved fast.

One day.

The fog was rolling on the mountains.

A white figure was shooting over to the palace like an alien. Wherever it passed by, the clouds and fogs would roll up aside and make a path.

There should be no way in the mountains, yet that person broke in so easily.

The person must be quite familiar with this place.

In the dense fog, two people in white clothes showed up. "Who is that?"

They were the two disciples who were on duty this day.

The person stopped moving fast and finally showed herself, a gorgeous woman wearing beautiful clothes. There was a small white flower sticking in her hair on the head.

As the beautiful lady showed up, the two disciples were stunned.

They were also women, yet they were still stunned by that lady's beauty.

The two of them were having the same thought. [Such a gorgeous beauty! She must be a goddess from the heavens. Why did she show up here in this filthy world?]

"Please do make a report now. Tell them Jun Yinglian of Sky Ice Palace is here to see Yue Gongxue, the Moonlight Saintess of your sect," the lady blandly said. She was here to see Yue Gongxue.

One of the two disciples was surprised. She said, "With all respect, Master Jun, but... Yue Gongxue is no longer our Moonlight Saintess."

Jun Yinglian was calm. She spoke blandly, "When I first knew Yue Gongxue, she was the Moonlight Saintess. I don't care what she is now. I only know one Moonlight Saintess, and that is her. Besides, I am here to see Yue Gongxue, not some stupid Moonlight Saintess. If your Moonlight Saintess is not Yue Gongxue, then it is nothing!"

"Master Yue Gongxue has been locked in the Moonlight Cave for penalty. Master Jun, I am afraid..." another disciple spoke in a low voice.

"Don't worry about it. Please tell the Moon Queen that I, Jun Yinglian, want to see Yue Gongxue. I would love to know what she will say," Jun Yinglian spoke blandly and casually.

However, although her words seemed casual and bland, her voice was still quite overwhelming.

The two disciples talked to each other for a while and then one of them left to make the report.

Jun Yinglian just stood there with her hands behind the back, waiting in the dense fog.

Her face looked calm and peaceful all the time, as if she had been waiting for thousands of years. She was just like a goddess.

However, the expression in her eyes was complicated.

She remembered something... but she wasn't sure if she remembered it wrong. If she remembered it right... things would be hopeless to her...

She had waited for a few minutes. The dense fog which had covered everything on the mountain suddenly moved crazily. A shadow showed up from inside the fog. A woman with a smile on her face said, "I never expected the Prime Master of Sky Ice Palace would come to my Full-moon Mountains. I apologize that I didn't greet you properly. Please forgive me."

"I am no longer the Prime Master of Sky Ice Palace. I am just like the person I want to see right now. Our glory is gone. You don't need to come out for me." Jun Yinglian turned over slowly and spoke blandly, "I am flattered though, that the Moon Queen came out for me."

A beautiful woman who was around forty years old smiled warmly. "Prime Master Jun, you lighted up my humble place. I surely have to come out for you personally, otherwise, it would be rude."

Jun Yinglian jeered at herself, but Moon Queen of Qiong-Hua Palace didn't take it seriously. In fact, Moon Queen would never dare to piss Jun Yinglian off. It was true that Qiong-Hua Palace shouldn't be afraid of Jun Yinglian because Sky Ice Palace was much weaker in all aspects than Qiong-Hua Palace, however, Jun Yinglian was one of the most powerful individuals in the world.

In fact, Moon Queen of Qiong-Hua wouldn't come out to greet her just because she was a powerful woman.

If Jun Yinglian came to this place two years earlier, Moon Queen of Qiong-Hua wouldn't come up for her.

However, things changed.

Jun Yinglian was totally different now!

She was not the Jun Yinglian they knew in the old days!

Two years earlier, Jun Yinglian was the host of Sky Ice Palace, also known as one of the most powerful top level Dao Origin Stage cultivators in the world.

That was something people would respect her for.

However, it wouldn't frighten people like Moon Queen at all.

Now, Jun Yinglian was different.

She was a woman who had lost her most beloved man. She was like a dead pond, but also like a bursting volcano.

Every superior cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm knew that Jun Yinglian loved Xiao Monarch so much.

Xiao Monarch's death shocked the entire Qing-Yun Realm.

Women understood women.

After Xiao Monarch died, Jun Yinglian became crazy.

...

Chapter 861: Give a Hand

Jun Yinglian hadn't shown herself in over one year. People knew what she was doing.

She didn't just choose to let the hatred go. In fact, she was doing one thing a wife should do when the husband died, mourning seclusion!

If Jun Yinglian went out for revenge at the beginning, everybody would feel better.

However, she chose to do the mourning seclusion first. That was kind of scary.

People knew after she finished it and returned to the martial world, she would start the craziest killing.

She would risk her life for revenge!

That could be so bloody!

A woman whose heart had died was more horrible than any superior cultivators!

Jun Yinglian was a superior cultivator. That made her even more horrible.

That was why when Moon Queen of Qiong-Hua heard that Jun Yinglian came to her place, she was frightened.

She knew one mistake, maybe a wrong word, or a wrong gaze, could make the master cultivator start a crazy fight.

She wouldn't let Jun Yinglian go crazy in her place. That would be a great loss to her sect. Even the powerful Qiong-Hua Palace didn't dare to mess with such a woman.

Thus, Moon Queen of Qiong-Hua went out to greet Jun Yinglian in person, with fear and worry in the heart. [The host of Sky Ice Palace, who has claimed to be the wife of the departed Xiao Monarch, why is she here?]

[The day when they killed Xiao Monarch, Qiong-Hua Palace didn't participate!]

[Did we piss her in any other way?]

[I must stay humble to solve the problem, if there was any.]

That was why Moon Queen didn't really care about anything Jun Yinglian said.

Everything was fine as long as Jun Yinglian didn't start killing!

Nothing was more horrible than fighting against a master cultivator who put her life in risk to fight!

"I want to see Yue Gongxue." Jun Yinglian looked at Moon Queen and indifferently told her what she wanted.

"Not a problem!" Moon Queen felt relieved that Jun Yinglian only asked for such. "Master Jun, please!"

She invited the gorgeous beauty into the palace.

Not to mention Jun Yinglian wanted to see Yue Gongxue, even if she wanted to slap Moon Queen on the face, Moon Queen might also say yes to it. All she wanted was to let this crazy woman leave her place.

Although she was actually more powerful than Jun Yinglian in cultivation, she still wouldn't dare to fight against her.

She could feel how horrible Jun Yinglian was at this moment!

A crazy woman, who was also one of the most powerful cultivators, would do anything to get what she wanted, even by giving up her life.

That was not just horrible!

She was terrifying!

She might look calm and peaceful, but in fact, if she burst in anger, she might immediately become an erupting volcano.

That erupting volcano might kill everybody including herself.

There were many superior cultivators in Qiong-Hua Palace indeed. If they fought together, they might be dozens of times stronger than Jun Yinglian.

However, if she was determined to go mad in this place, she could at least kill one-fourth of all the superior cultivators before she died.

Moon Queen knew how horrible a woman could become. She was a woman herself after all...

She decided to let the volcano erupt in the three factions' places...

[He who has a debt has a head. I just want her to leave...]

In Moon Penalty Cave.

Yue Gongxue had been locked in this cave since the day she was captured.

It was extremely cold. When Jun Yinglian was only one-third of the way into that cave, the walls were already all covered by thousand years old ice. She frowned and said, "I know this is somewhere people have their penalty, but it is still too cold! Moon Queen, you lock your own people in such a place. That is cruel."

Moon Queen smiled and said, "The girl must have learned enough here. Since you said so, I will send people to take her out and lock her in somewhere warmer."

She sounded soft but still didn't want to spare the lady.

Jun Yinglian looked at Moon Queen blandly without saying anything.

Moon Queen just kept smiling. She didn't say anything either.

Apparently, she would give in on some matters, but not at all matters. Even though Jun Yinglian wanted her to do something now, she wouldn't give in. Qiong-Hua Palace had a bottom line that no one could cross after all!

After a while, Jun Yinglian said, "You agree to move her to

somewhere warmer. That's good. But why tomorrow? Why don't you just let her out today. It is too cold here. I can't stand it."

[Can't stand it?]

Moon Queen was absolutely speechless about that.

[If somebody else told me they couldn't bear the coldness here, I can understand. It is really cold here. However, your Sky Ice Palace is the coldest place in the world! The coldest!]

[You are the host of Sky Ice Palace. Fine. You used to be, but you are still the same person. You must have gotten used to the coldness. That is such a big lie to tell me you can't stand the coldness here. Can't you make up a better excuse to help Yue Gongxue?]

So as she thought, she didn't show any difference on the face. She smiled. "You misunderstood me, Master Jun. I promise you I will let you see each other and I will spare her from this cave. I don't care about one or two days earlier. How about this, come with me and wait for two hours. Two hours later, Yue Gongxue will meet you in Flower Villa."

Jun Yinglian turned around and walked back. "Good. I can't bother you to lead the way for me. Please just send a girl to lead the way. I will go to the villa and wait for Yue Gongxue. I don't want to waste too much of your time. Two hours must be enough for you to deal with many daily affairs."

"Master Jun, you came to my place and I didn't give you a proper greeting. It is never a waste of time for me to spend time with you. There are many good views here. Why don't we go have a tour? It's better than just waiting for two hours!" Moon Queen kept trying to be humble all the way. She wouldn't give Jun Yinglian any chance to go mad at her.

Two hours was for Yue Gongxue to prepare herself, wash her face and do a bit of makeup.

All women understood how important it was.

After two hours.

Jun Yinglian was having a tour around Qiong-Hua Palace with the company of Moon Queen. In fact, she never really saw anything because she was not interested. She stopped at the door of the Flower Villa and seriously spoke, "I came to see Yue Gongxue because I have something personal to ask her."

Her voice sounded so chilling.

Moon Queen made a fake laugh and said, "Alright. I guess I should better not interrupt."

Jun Yinglian nodded. Moon Queen waved her hand and then left with all her people.

...

Chapter 862: Yours and Mine

Far away from Jun Yinglian, an elder didn't seem so happy about it and said, "My Queen, that lady is too arrogant... You acted so humbly to accompany her to travel our place. How could she act so shamelessly? I say we should give her a real lesson."

"Shut up." Moon Queen looked at her coldly and said, "Give her a lesson? You? What do you have to give her a real lesson? Your own life? Or do you want to spend all the lives in our place so that you can feel better? Can't you understand why I did all that to her? She is a woman who has just lost her beloved one. She could give up her life at any second. She will definitely go destroy the three factions... even die with them... We have been dreaming to destroy them but we never dared to... And you are telling me you want to make some troubles on her? If you want to die, just let me help. I can't let you risk my entire palace to mess with this woman right now!"

"Remember, we must help her stay in a perfect condition. We may even help her to attack the three factions so that they won't have the chance to overtake us. Just give her whatever she asked for..." Suddenly, she stopped.

She remembered something that greatly shocked her.

...

In the Flower Villa.

This was the quietest place in Qiong-Hua Palace.

There were no walls, only flowers and trees around the villa. The branches and vines grew together and made a natural wall and a huge green roof. This was a villa built by plants.

There were flowers falling in the air all year along.

That was why it was named Flower Villa.

Jun Yinglian walked to the door. It was a door of fog. As the fog drifted away, it revealed the inside of the villa.

She stepped on the fallen flower on the floor and entered the building.

In the yard of the villa, there was a woman in white waiting for her.

The lady was in all white. Her long hair was akin to a waterfall. There was no other color. She didn't wear any accessories, however, she looked so natural and elegant.

The expression on her face was as indifferent as Jun Yinglian.

It seemed there was nothing in the world that she cared anymore.

In fact, her face looked pale. She must be weak.

She must have been tortured by time both physically and mentally.

She just stood on the full yard of fallen flowers. It felt like she was one of the fallen flowers herself. It felt like she was going to disappear to the dust in the fog at any second.

Jun Yinglian looked at her and sighed. "Yue Gongxue, it has been a while."

The lady was Ye Xiao's mother, the former Moonlight Saintess of the Great Qiong-Hua Palace, wife of Ye Nantian, Yue Gongxue!

At the moment, when Jun Yinglian called her, she raised her head up and looked at Jun Yinglian. She seemed so calm. She just smiled and said, "Thank you, Master Jun."

"You're welcome." Jun Yinglian said, "Even if I didn't come, it is almost the day you can come out. Am I right? I am just pushing it a bit. No need to thank me."

Yue Gongxue smiled and said, "In fact, it makes no difference, staying here or in that cold cave."

That was a bit unreasonable to say so. It was unacceptably cold in that Moon Penalty Cave, and it was terrible inside. No matter how isolated the Flower Villa was, it was on the floor. There was a huge difference between these two places. Jun Yinglian helped Yue Gongxue out of that cave. It was such a great favor. However, what Yue Gongxue said might hurt Jun Yinglian's feeling. That was not right!

However, Jun Yinglian totally understood her. She even felt the sorrow of Yue Gongxue. She walked to Yue Gongxue and waved her sleeve. Suddenly, a set of teapot and cups showed up on the table.

"Nineteen years ago, we first met each other. What we did was to drink tea and chat. You told me that my tea smelled so good." Jun Yinglian said, "Since I came here to see you this time, I took the tea and the tools with me."

"If there is anybody who deserves these tea set and this tea, you must be the only one."

Jun Yinglian said, "I brought them and I will give it to you. I guess I won't need them from now on after all."

Yue Gongxue looked up in surprise. She looked at Jun Yinglian. "I don't understand. You are such a capable cultivator. Why would you say such sorrowful words? Why?"

Jun Yinglian was silent for a while, then she said blandly, "I forgot that you don't know about my story. Xiao Monarch... Ye Xiao is dead."

Yue Gongxue was shocked. She suddenly trembled and looked up at Jun Yinglian. She had been locked in that cave for sixteen years. She hadn't been told that Xiao Monarch was dead.

Jun Yinglian didn't say anything. She just focused on making tea. However, tears dropped down from her pretty eyes.

Yue Gongxue sighed. In that sigh, there was grievance and

sorrow.

She looked up and spoke in a low voice, "Master Jun, I am sorry that I brought up your sadness."

Jun Yinglian said, "We are close friends, no need for an apology."

As she waved her long sleeve, the spiritual qi in the air became a stream of water pouring into the teapot. Her other hand held the teapot, and after a few seconds, the teapot was heated.

She blandly spoke, "Back then, when you and I met each other, we became good friends in the first sight. I never thought after all these years, we will both be in such miserable situations." Her eyes looked full of sorrow. "You and me, we are suffering the same sorrow... In fact, I am afraid our hearts have died long ago... Maybe we are just two soulless human bodies..."

Yue Gongxue stared at the mist rolling up from the teapot. She seemed lost in the memory. After a while, she said, "That's right. I guess there is nothing in the world that can bring me pleasure again. Nothing in the world can bring my heart back to life."

Jun Yinglian blandly spoke, "I believe you will see that day coming. I am also sure it is never going to happen to me."

Yue Gongxue sighed and gritted her teeth. "Master Jun... Xiao Monarch's death... My condolences... However, I have to say one thing... Xiao Monarch is dead... but... Ye Xiao is... still alive."

"He will never die!"

Jun Yinglian slight lost her composure and said, "Yes! My Ye Xiao is dead, but your Ye Xiao may never die!"

Chapter 863: The Past

Yue Gongxue was a bit surprised about what Jun Yinglian just said. Those were some confusing words. Yue Gongxue suddenly started shaking. She couldn't believe what she just heard. She got close to Jun Yinglian and said, "What? What do you mean?"

Jun Yinglian calmed down again. She poured the green tea into the transparent jade teacup and blandly said, "I still remember that day... We met when you were pregnant."

"When your son was born... and you two have to escaped, I helped you," she continued. "However... because I was stuck in other business, I didn't stay with you all along. I had to chase after my man. I am sorry that I couldn't do more for you."

Yue Gongxue calmed down and said, "Please don't be. The world was against us. Nobody ever helped us except you. Even his clan betrayed him. You are the only one who truly gave us a hand... I wouldn't ask for more."

"It was just something really simple though. If I could do more, maybe you two wouldn't end up so piteous!" Jun Yinglian shook her head.

"Maybe it didn't mean much to you, but for us, you saved our lives. I won't forget it. And I know there is no way I can return the favor." Yue Gongxue was grateful.

"After that, I sent a message to Moon Queen, in the name of me and Xiao Monarch... we asked her to spare your lives," Jun Yinglian said, "His name and mine were still powerful at that time. After that, I heard your husband was exiled to the lower realm, and you were locked in captivity... I never knew Qiong-Hua Palace would be so adamant."

Yue Gongxue was enlightened. "I see. I was wondering why they still kept me alive. I betrayed my sect after all. It was your message

that saved us!"

She, her husband, and her son should have been killed but were saved because of Jun Yinglian and Ye Xiao's message to Moon Queen. That was why she could still live in the world. However, it was too late for her to know it. Xiao Monarch was already dead...

She was so grateful. She said, "Things aren't good for me. However, as long as they are still alive, there is hope."

Jun Yinglian smiled bitterly and said, "That's right. As long as they are alive, there is hope."

She thought of Ye Xiao and felt pain in the heart like being stabbed by a sharp knife.

Yue Gongxue had suffered so much, but she now knew her husband and son were both alive.

It gave her hope that supported her to live on.

What about Jun Yinglian?

[I am the one who is alive. What then? Is there hope?]

"I remember that you wanted to leave your son to me, so that I can keep the kid alive." Jun Yinglian smiled and said, "What a shame. I was truly busy with other matters. I was afraid I couldn't keep him safe..."

Yue Gongxue was still grateful. "Even so, you gave us a suggestion. You told us to give the kid a name of a world shocking figure."

"We have thought for a long time and decided to name him after Xiao Monarch... My husband is named Ye after all..." Yue Gongxue said, "It truly humiliated Xiao Monarch... however, I think Xiao Monarch would agree to help since you sent the message in his name..."

"That's right. He surely supported me. That's why I could use his name to write that letter." Jun Yinglian said, "It was my idea

though... However, no matter how much Qiong-Hua Palace didn't like it, they wouldn't want to be hostile to both of us. They would have to make a decision after all."

Yue Gongxue was so appreciative. "Again, thank you so much."

"However, the powerful Xiao Monarch is dead." Jun Yinglian said, "So this world shocking name, Ye Xiao... I don't think it will protect your son. Instead, it may get him killed."

Yue Gongxue raised her head with grievance in her eyes. She seemed to be looking at somewhere far away and then sighed. She said, "I know that. But... I don't even know where... where my son is. I don't know if he is happy... I think he is still in the lower realm right now..."

Jun Yinglian spoke in a low voice, "I am here to ask you something... Your son... did you give him that name? Ye Xiao?"

Yue Gongxue seemed a bit embarrassed. "Yes."

An expression of despair showed up on Jun Yinglian's face and then quickly disappeared. She asked, "I know a little about your husband and your son. You said they are in the lower realm. Do you mean the Land of Han-Yang?"

Yue Gongxue gritted her teeth and nodded.

Land of Han-Yang, that was a place she had never been to but had dreamt of several times before.

This place was such an important place for Yue Gongxue all these years!

Her husband and her son were both in that realm!

Jun Yinglian felt chilled. She didn't talk anymore and just kept making tea.

It seemed the two answers were all she wanted to know in the world. There was nothing she cared about anymore now.

She didn't talk anymore, but Yue Gongxue didn't want silence.

Jun Yinglian had just asked her two questions and then stopped talking. She didn't understand what she meant at all. However, the two questions concerned her two most important men in the world! She couldn't bear the awkward silence!

After being quiet for a while, she realized Jun Yinglian wouldn't say anything now. She panicked.

[Are you here to just ask about my son's name? Why don't you tell me what happened? This is killing me...]

However, Jun Yinglian really didn't want to say anything now. She came to this place for the answer and she got it. Before she came, she got herself a tiny hope floating outside the realm... She didn't really quite believe it could be true...

Yue Gongxue's answer totally killed that tiny hope...

Jun Yinglian was now hopeless and frustrated. The only thing that kept her alive now was the desire for revenge.

However, she underestimated a mother's desire for her son. Yue Gongxue hadn't seen her son for seventeen years.

Seventeen years... Finally, somebody came to her and talked to her about her son! How could she let it go?

Her heart nearly popped out of her mouth through the throat.

"Master Jun, what you said... Did you... did you see my... poor kid?" Yue Gongxue looked at Jun Yinglian cautiously. She wanted to find the answer from Jun Yinglian's expression.

"No," Jun Yinglian shook her head and casually answered.

...

Chapter 864: Motherliness!

Jun Yinglian was totally frustrated and hopeless. It was difficult for her to even answer Yue Gongxue's question.

"But what you asked just now..." Yue Gongxue's eyes were glowing. Her face seemed glowing. "It is about my son. If you know anything about my poor son, please do tell me..."

"That's a misunderstanding... What I asked does not concern your son," Jun Yinglian spoke in a weak voice.

"Is it... Is my son... now... in Qing-Yun Realm?" Yue Gongxue thought of one possibility. Her eyes lit up.

[If he is still in the Land of Han-Yang, Jun Yinglian would never hear of him!]

"Your son... maybe your son is a secret talented young man..." Jun Yinglian was soft in the heart. She looked at Yue Gongxue and said, "One of my friends mentioned him earlier. Your son may have come to Qing-Yun Realm... I have no idea where he is though."

Yue Gongxue was shaking. She suddenly got closer to Jun Yinglian and grabbed her hand so tight. "Master Jun, please... Tell me anything about him... Anything you know..."

When she spoke, tears kept flowing down from her cheeks. She tried so hard to hold it, but it was impossible. She was sobbing so badly that she nearly passed out.

She tightly held Jun Yinglian's hand. In her eyes, there was yearning.

Even just small pieces of incoherent words about her son would be a great comfort for her! She wanted to hear about her son. She had been longing for it for so many years, till her heart was breaking apart...

Jun Yinglian sighed. She stared at Yue Gongxue's face. She saw her aspiration.

She knew that if she made up something, the woman in front of her might die someday because of disappointment and heartbreak.

[I... I truly have no clue...]

Jun Yinglian only knew the story that Bing Xinyue told her. She personally knew nothing about her son.

However, she couldn't endure the look on Yue Gongxue's face anymore. She decided to give in.

"I know just a little about your son. What I know is from other's narratives..." She had no other choice but to tell Yue Gongxue everything Bing Xinyue said earlier about Ye Xiao.

While she was telling the story, Yue Gongxue kept asking questions.

Yue Gongxue wasn't that cold and indifferent anymore.

No matter how Jun Yinglian explained, Yue Gongxue always had new questions.

She asked about every word Jun Yinglian said about her son again and again.

Jun Yinglian told her Ye Xiao was a talented young man. Yue Gongxue was so interested. She wanted to know more about it.

She just kept looking at Jun Yinglian in the eyes.

Jun Yinglian didn't know much about it.

She didn't even see that Ye Xiao before. Besides, that young man's existence just broke her tiny hope...

Now she was being questioned about him...

[What is going on with all this!]

She felt that she was going to freak out soon...

"Look, this is my guess..." Jun Yinglian was being cautious. "Your son has grown up alone in the Land of Han-Yang. He must be only seventeen years old. My friend toles me that he can ascend to Qing-Yun Realm now... In his seventeenth, he actually has the power to ascend to an upper world... I guess he must be a genius... I haven't seen him before, so I can't tell you any more about him..."

Yue Gongxue was so into it. "Seventeen. He ascended to this world. He should be no higher than the top level of Sky Origin Stage. That doesn't prove him a genius. Let's say he succeeded, then he is in Spirit Origin Stage. That's not true..."

Jun Yinglian held her own forehead. She was speechless now.

[Yue Gongxue apparently wants me to praise her son a few more. She is a great cultivator too. How could she not know the truth?]

[A kid who grows up in the Land of Han-Yang, a realm that is so low that it is poor, reaches the top level of Sky Origin Stage and then ascends to the upper realm... You are telling me that doesn't make him a genius?]

In fact, Yue Gongxue wanted to hear Jun Yinglian praise his son as a genius! Jun Yinglian felt embarrassed.

In fact, Yue Gongxue wanted to keep hearing it!

That was not a joke. She had been asking Jun Yinglian some questions that Jun Yinglian would answer with a praise for Ye Xiao...

Jun YInglian felt that this was such a difficult job. She suddenly stoops up and said, "Time flies. I have other business to take care of. I guess this is it. I will see you around."

"Why are you leaving so soon? Why not just stay a few minutes longer?" Yue Gongxue apparently didn't want to end the conversation.

"No."

[I can't stay here any longer. I am afraid that I will slap your face to kill you instantly, or I will freak out and become a lunatic. I may slap myself to death too! I can't stand this.]

Jun Yinglian was determined to leave. However, she still tried to comfort Yue Gongxue. "Just stay here. Take good care of yourself. Maybe not long later, your genius son will come pick you up and take you out. A genius like him would never let his mother suffer like this... Maybe there will be a big fight between Qiong-Hua Palace and your son."

Yue Gongxue murmured, "Really? Is it possible?"

She was lost and then murmured again, "I don't want him to take the risk to save me... I hope that he can have a happy and peaceful life... I don't want him to feel any pain in his life... If he isn't a genius, if he can't ascend to Qing-Yun Realm, maybe he will more likely live a happy life?"

Jun Yinglian sighed. She turned around and left, but before she went far, she heard Yue Gongxue.

"Master Jun, can I ask for a favor?" She was begging. "I can't go out. Can you... take one thing with you and give it to my son for me?"

Jun Yinglian was troubled. "I am afraid you are asking the wrong person to help. Once I step out here, I am on my way to a massacre. Death will be haunting me. I don't know how long I can still live... and how far I can go... I am afraid what you want me to take will..."

Yue Gongxue begged her. "Please, I have been imprisoned for seventeen years. You are the only one I saw during the seventeen years. I know I can only give it to you... I really don't have anybody else who can help me..."

Jun Yinglian's heart melted. She said, "Fine... What do you want me to take?"

Yue Gongxue was delighted. However, she seemed hesitant.

She had been imprisoned for seventeen years. She didn't have anything with her anymore. As a mother, she hadn't seen her son ever during the seventeen years. She felt she was the worst mother in the world. Now she finally saw a trustworthy person, so she wanted to give her son something. However, she suddenly realized that she had nothing to give her son. She felt so sad in the heart and couldn't stop sobbing with tears.

...

Chapter 865: Incurrigible!

Jun Yinglian was waiting. However, after a long while, Yue Gongxue still didn't give her anything. Jun Yinglian was confused as she looked at Yue Gongxue.

Yue Gongxue held her two hands together. She seemed helpless. Her face was red. It was awkward. More and more tears flowed down...

After a while, she sobbed. "I know you must be busy. There are so many things you need to do. I guess I won't bother you with this. Please, if you meet my son, tell him this... Tell him... that his mother wants him to live well... his mother... misses him... so much..."

"Tell him his mother has nothing valuable to give him... Tell him to be careful... as the martial world is full of danger... Tell him... I am fine in Qiong-Hua Palace... I am good... Tell him not to worry about me..."

After this, Yue Gongxue burst into tears and cried.

Jun Yinglian made a long sigh. Even she felt grieved in the heart.

"Okay. If I see him, I will tell him!"

When Jun Yinglian left the mountains of Qiong-Hua Palace, she was lost in thoughts.

What she kept thinking of was the image of Yue Gongxue, the deep-rooted longing and the crystal tears...

[Poor parental love...]

She sighed. She was suffering from the love of romance, while Yue Gongxue was suffering from the love of family!

Love always hurt!

She wanted to give her son something, yet there was nothing she could give. Wasn't that the biggest grief of a mother?

However, what she said was full of motherliness.

[I will be fine... Will you really be fine?]

[I guess I have to tell your son about this!]

[After this, it is going to take me a longer time to take revenge. Xiao, wait for me...] Jun Yinglian thought.

No matter what, she just couldn't ignore a mother's humble wish.

A mother who had been parted from her son since the boy was born!

Seventeen years...

What a tragedy!

Jun Yinglian knew that the departed Xiao Monarch wouldn't blame her for helping a piteous mother like her!

She made a long sigh. Suddenly, she waved her right hand and drew out her sword. She moved aside and seven beams of sword lights shot out.

- Clang! -

She put the sword back into the scabbard and then left.

"When I want you to know where I am, I will let you stay behind. If I don't want to be followed, whoever dares to hide behind me will pay with their lives! Keep sending people to track on me if you can afford death."

"Don't you three factions hurry. I will visit you very soon!"

Then her figure disappeared in the fog on the mountains.

Seven beams of blood shot out from inside the bushes on the roadside.

There were seven men hiding under the ground so as to cover their trace when they were following Jun Yinglian. However, now they could never get out anymore. In fact, they had buried themselves in the ground.

No trace of any of them was left at all.

Jun Yinglian disappeared since then.

...

After Jun Yinglian left Qiong-Hua Palace.

Yue Gongxue looked at the flowers around her with a blank head. Her eyes were blank. All she was thinking about was her grown-up son, who might have ascended to the Qing-Yun Realm...

She wiped her eyes again.

"I am his mother... I am a bad mother..." She was sobbing. "He has grown up now... I haven't even made clothes for him..."

She was weeping but didn't notice the Moon Queen standing behind her for a long time.

Moon Queen quietly looked the woman, who was once her most favorite disciple, among lots of fallen flowers.

Her eyes were filled with complicated expression.

"I guess she is gone," Moon Queen said.

"Yes... Ah?" Yue Gongxue turned around. She was shocked. "Master."

"Oh. You still remember you have a master. You still call me master." Moon Queen half closed her eyes and blandly said, "Let me ask you, what does Master Jun want from you?"

Yue Gongxue was frightened. She said, "We used to meet each other. We were not so close friends though. Just friends. She helped me a lot once. She was here to ask me about something..."

Moon Queen nodded. "Something that she wouldn't care for after she died."

Yue Gongxue lowered her head and said, "It should be. I don't understand either. Why would she come ask me that... Even though she is no longer the Prime Master of her sect, there should

still be trustworthy people around her that she could talk to..."

"Surely, she can trust some of her people. She just doesn't want Sky Ice Palace to get involved. She came to you because of your special background. What a brilliant idea." Moon Queen sighed while looking up to the sky.

A falling flower fell down before her eyes. It was silent.

"Jun Yinglian is such an affectionate woman..." She smiled and blandly said, "What a pity. She is also stupid and foolish."

Yue Gongxue was surprised.

[Stupid and foolish?]

[Jun Yinglian?]

However, she knew that she was just the same with Jun Yinglian.

She said, "Master... In fact... We are just women..."

Moon Queen raged up and said, "Women? So what? Are all women obligated to serve their husbands and sons? Can't we just build our own empire by our own hands?"

Yue Gongxue said, "Of course we can. But to have a beloved husband and a home should be the most beautiful aspiration of a woman."

"I can't believe this. After all these years, you are still wrongheaded!" Moon Queen was annoyed. "I guess the seventeen years of isolated cultivation are all just wasting time!"

Yue Gongxue smiled bitterly and said, "Seventeen years... I did suffer during that isolated cultivation."

In fact, she thought. [Isolated cultivation? What a nice saying. When did I ever cultivate? I was imprisoned! I was locked!]

Moon Queen understood what she meant. She was pissed. "For all these years, I have kept you away from the martial world, yet your personality never improved at all! I am disappointed! I am very

disappointed!"

"All men in the world will do treachery. None of them can be trusted with your life! He surely loves you when you are young and beautiful! When you are old, he will go for another without hesitation! Men... should all die!"

She was being fierce and murderous while speaking!

Yue Gongxue took a deep breath. "Master, not all women..." She got up the courage to continue, "Not every woman can meet the right man. Not every man is a dishonest person..."

She didn't say it clearly, but it was understandable enough.

[You met a dishonest man, but I didn't.]

[You can't blame all men in the world just because of your unfortunate story.]

Moon Queen was furious. Her voice became harsh and raspy. "Yue Gongxue! Good! Good for you! How dare you indoctrinate me... Good..."

"I don't." Yue Gongxue bowed.

"No? Is there really anything you don't dare to do?" Moon Queen was flaming in anger. "Your parents died when you were a kid. I brought you back and raised you carefully. I taught you what I knew. Look what you did? You didn't return the favor and make a contribution to the sect. Instead, you pledged to marry a filthy man without permission! You gave birth to a bastard and look at you... You are still a mess even now!"

...

Chapter 866: Foodie!

Moon Queen was getting more and more furious.

"You even... even... You even talk to me like that! Yue Gongxue, how dare you? Did Jun Yinglian give you the courage?"

Yue Gongxue shook her head. "No. She didn't say anything... I am just being honest to you. I am telling the truth! I swear!"

Moon Queen was still angry. She fiercely spoke, "Do you think Jun Yinglian lives any better? What does she have to criticize others? She devoted herself entirely to a man who didn't want her! Look how pathetic she is now! She got nothing, even till that man died! She even thought of avenging him... She is foolish, and she shouldn't interfere in other's business!"

"I don't want to fight against someone who will die soon. Do you think I really care about Jun Yinglian? She is now out of our palace. I have nothing to worry about now. What if I go out and kill her right now? What do you think? Will I do that? Am I able to do that?" she was shouting.

"Please forgive me, Master. I didn't mean that. If I have anything irreverent thoughts, I would accept death penalty." Yue Gongxue said, "I... I am confused and troubled. I... I am a mother. I haven't seen my child for seventeen years. I have never spent even one second with him... I totally lost my mind when I thought of my child. Please, forgive me. This has nothing to do with Master Jun."

Moon Queen was suddenly shocked when she heard Yue Gongxue talking about her son. The expression in her eyes was complicated. Suddenly, she humphed and then left.

"I always keep my word. From now on, you should stay in this villa and reflect on yourself. Do not leave this place even one step without my permission!"

She left.

Yue Gongxue stayed there for a moment and then she sat down.

She could feel her master hesitate when the last words were spoken.

Moon Queen was thinking about whether she should send Yue Gongxue back to that cave or leave her in the villa.

In the end, she decided to keep her own word and leave her in this place. In fact, she didn't want Yue Gongxue to suffer that much anymore.

"Thank you... Master... but I... won't change my mind." Yue Gongxue sat in the villa and spoke in a low voice, "I miss my family, my husband and my son..."

"I am just an ordinary woman... I have no great ambition..."

"Xiao Xiao... Nantian..."

...

Ye Xiao was not as casual as he had been now. He met the real problem.

Many superior cultivators were waiting to fight against him. It was surely an opportunity, but also a great challenge. He didn't have time to rest. One after another, he kept fighting.

In the beginning, he kept being beaten up by those real powerful disciples. He was disgraced, embarrassed and miserable... even though he was such a smart and experienced cultivator...

However, there was a huge gap.

He was too much weaker!

The biggest ant might defeat all other ants easily!

However, when it faced a chicken...

Even the weakest chicken... the ant would fail!

They were in two completely different power levels. No matter how strong the ant was, it would be swallowed by a chicken easily!

Luckily, Ye Xiao knew that none of those people were hostile to him.

That meant nobody would kill him!

The chicken didn't eat the ant. The ant would never die in the combat!

Under such circumstances, he was just forced to cultivate as hard as he could.

He kept being beaten up like hell every day, yet he was improving rather fast.

Now Ye Xiao had called Erhuo back. He had a strong cultivation foundation now, that meant he could use the help of the supreme dan beads Erhuo made during the recent days...

"Erhuo, what do you want to do with those snakes?"

In the Space, Ye Xiao was gasping. He had been punched all day and he just wanted to have a rest. Looking at the dead snakes in the Space, he felt scared.

He certainly wasn't a coward, but the snakes in the Space were truly creepy.

The tens of thousands of snakes piled up like a mountain in the Space. In the Space, the snake bodies didn't rot. However, Ye Xiao had to endure the creepy scene of the snake mountain everytime he went to the Space.

Erhuo meowed with an innocent look as if the snakes had nothing to do with it!

Ye Xiao had been busy on the special training, so he hadn't spent much time with Erhuo. When he saw Erhuo now, he found it became smooth and elegant. Every hair of it seemed shining. It was still as big as a fist, but he could feel it enhanced by a wide margin.

It had been so weak when it just came out of the egg, but now it was so much stronger.

He could tell that Erhuo had eaten many good stuff.

It moved much faster now. If Ye Xiao didn't pay attention to it, he couldn't notice its movement at all. It moved just like lightning.

"Eat..." Erhuo gave him an explanation.

[Are you a fool?. Listen to your question.]

[Of course, I am going to eat these snakes. What? Do you think I can conceive a son or something with those dead snakes?]

[Hmm... Snakes lay eggs...]

[Pah! I was born anew. How could snakes lay eggs? That's humiliating!]

Over a dozen snakes were staying beside the dead snakes. These were living. They saw the cat open its mouth and got terribly frightened.

They were forced to stay in this place. They didn't even know how they got into this place, not to mention get out... Every day, they had to face the overwhelming suppression from the cat, as if it was their king. Every day, they had to spirit up and play with the cat... When they were allowed to rest, they were only allowed to rest beside the dead bodies of their own kin...

Snakes were cold-blooded. Lucky for them. That was why they could endure this...

Otherwise, they should have all gone crazy...

"Eat?" Ye Xiao freaked out. "All these dead snakes? How do you eat them all? You are just a small cat! What? You're going to eat dead snakes every day? Won't you be bored? Every time I come here, I see these disgusting things. Don't you feel sick about it? You are telling me you are going to eat them?"

...

Chapter 867: Blood Bead!

Erhuo thought for a while and frowned. It looked at the dead snakes and thought of the past few days when it kept eating fish. That was right. No matter how good the food was, it became tiring to eat it again and again many times.

Erhuo thought that he would never get tired of fish since there were so many different kinds of fish there. However, after those days, Erhuo was tired. Now when it saw the fish, it would throw up. As Erhuo thought about the snakes, it felt a bit sick too. Erhuo nearly puked when it smelled the dead snakes.

All living creatures with wisdom would dislike something more when it started to dislike that thing. Apparently, Erhuo was a wise cat. Since it didn't like something anymore, it wanted to sweep it all off.

Erhuo shook the whiskers and walked around the dead snakes.

It sat on the floor and held its lower jaw with one paw, as if it was in deep thoughts.

[He is right. As I look at them now, I feel a bit disgusted. The longer I look at them, the more disgusted I feel. This is serious. I have to solve this as soon as possible... But what should I do? I can't just throw them away... What a waste...]

A cat... was lost in thoughts...

Ye Xiao was surprised by such a scene. He didn't even go on asking about the snake bodies. He was shocked!

The next moment, Erhuo shouted. It seemed it was happy.

After that, it grabbed a few dead snakes with its paw and then rubbed the dead snakes with two paws...

Ye Xiao was stunned. His eyes were opened so wide. His eyeballs nearly popped out if not for the eye frames.

What he saw was too stunning after all...

He saw Erhuo rubbing the snake body and then the snake was gone. Instead, a small red colored bead appeared!

Erhuo touched the bead and stared at it. It seemed quite satisfied with the bead.

After that, it moved its butt and pushed the bead to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao picked up the bead and didn't recognize it. It felt so soft in his hand. It wasn't like any other medicines. It was more like a rubber ball.

After Erhuo's explanation, Ye Xiao realized it was the essence of the snake. Erhuo had removed every impurity of that snake and made it into one small thing.

The bead was mostly snake's blood. It wasn't smelly at all. Instead, it smelled kind of good.

That was a skill Erhuo learned during the time it kept eating those fish. It would make the food smaller before eating it!

After practicing for many times, it was an expert now...

Erhuo didn't stop. It continued to make that bead... - Shoot, shoot, shoot... - Many blood beads were made by its small paws. After a while, there was a pile of it.

The dead snake mountain was getting smaller and smaller.

On the other side, the over a dozen big living snakes were totally frightened while staring at Erhuo. They were trembling... They didn't even dare to show their tongues...

Apparently, they knew better about what those blood beans meant!

[Oh my heavens... So many snake bodies... The cat just makes them disappear so easily...]

[So they will all become Blood Essence?]

[We knew the cat was horrible, but we never expected it to be so brutal... It just moved its paw and the blood suddenly became a small bead of blood essence. That is a marvelous skill!]

Ye Xiao didn't really understand how powerful Erhuo was... What he knew was the big snakes were sweating on the head...

Scared snakes!

Ye Xiao was surprised.

[Who says snakes are cold-blooded animal? I am going to tell them a real contradictory truth!]

[I see them sweating now. They don't sweat because they don't have the reason to]

[These snakes are scared! They are sweating!]

[This is the truth!]

Erhuo was working so hard this time. It kept making the blood beads. After a while, Erhuo seemed tired. It grabbed a blood bead on the floor and ate it.

After that, it was suddenly spirited up. It could immediately go on making more.

Ye Xiao grabbed that blood bead in the hand. He felt a bit disgusted. He wanted to eat it, but didn't really dare to.

Erhuo didn't understand why Ye Xiao hesitated. It looked at Ye Xiao with its widely opened eyes, shaking its whiskers. "Meow?"

Its meant, 'I worked so hard to make it. Why don't you just eat it? It tastes good! I tasted it!'

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. 'How do you want me to eat it? I saw you rubbing the snakes and made them into these blood beads... I wanted to puke... And you want me to eat it? Really...'

Erhuo shook its tail. "Meow..."

'Go on. Eat it. It's good. Really delicious...'

Ye Xiao looked at the blood bead and couldn't make up his mind to eat it.

Erhuo suddenly jumped up and moved to Ye Xiao. It pushed one blood bead into Ye Xiao's mouth all of a sudden.

Ye Xiao didn't have time to react. The blood bead had entered his mouth!

Ye Xiao was shocked that Erhuo was actually this fast! He couldn't even have time to react! Then he thought of the disgusting thing in his mouth. He felt sick. Before he threw up, he felt the warmth rushing down through his throat and his blood was boiling up! It actually enhanced his physical condition.

There was a power rolling in his dantian... It seemed it added more spiritual qi in the dantian!

The blood bead could recover his physical condition and also improve his cultivation!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He didn't feel disgusted at all. The only thought in his mind was...

[This... This is marvelous! The blood bead must be the most powerful recovery medicine!]

Erhuo casually got down on the floor and walked around. It looked quite proud.

[You don't want it? I say you will!]

[Humph...]

And then it saw Ye Xiao grab a full hand of blood bead and swallowed them all...

[As long as it can improve my cultivation... I will eat whatever it is!]

[I ate snakes before! Snake blood is easy!]

Erhuo was stunned...

[What... What the hell?]

[Didn't you just tell me you can't do it? Isn't it disgusting? What? Now you start snatching it?]

[Meow... Do not eat them up, you prick...]

...

Chapter 868: Here Is a Monster

Ye Xiao started the continuous combats again.

Over sixty people fought against him one by one. They had witnessed a miracle!

A legend!

A myth!

In the morning, after a few bouts of training, Ye Xiao started the continuous fights. He kept being beaten by over sixty people without stopping. He was punched, kicked, twisted... but eventually held it. Till it was lunch time, he finally had the time to rest.

After lunch, the ruthless combat began again.

However, the other disciples found that Ye Chongxiao seemed to be a bit stronger!

In the afternoon, Ye Chongxiao was stronger than the morning, but he still couldn't defeat anybody. He was punched, kicked, twisted, and tortured again. It surprised everybody that he actually got through it!

Till it was time for dinner, he finally had another chance to rest.

After dinner, it began again. He was going to be tortured again. However, the others all felt it strange. [It seems he is stronger than the afternoon? Am I having an illusion?]

The combat didn't stop until midnight. The disciples all left for rest and cultivation.

Early in the next morning, the combat continued.

However, the disciples were all shocked. [What? He seems much stronger than last night!]

[This is not an illusion!]

Early in the morning of the last day, he was defeated by one strike when facing a level five Dream Origin Stage man. A clean crash. After that, a bit later in the morning, he was still knocked down by one strike, but he had done many moves. At least it wasn't that ugly. In the afternoon, he was still defeated by one strike, but he did a reaction to save himself from falling down to the floor embarrassingly. At the night, he was even better than that. That was a fast improvement.

The next morning, he was also defeated by one strike. However, he just staggered when he lost it.

The level five disciple was surprised. He couldn't believe it. [What is wrong? I struck with the same power I did yesterday. Why is this ending totally different...]

Zhan Yunfei had been watching them all day. If this disciple dared to attack Ye Xiao with any bigger power and hurt him any worse, Zhan Yunfei might tear the disciple into pieces immediately... That was why he attacked in the same power.

[Why? He has been getting better and better. How did he do it?]

[It is just one day...]

The disciples were all experienced cultivators. However, they had never seen anybody improve so fast ever.

The next day... they didn't stop being shocked...

At the night...

When Ye Chongxiao was cultivating by himself, he suddenly became level two of Dream Origin Stage... - Boom. -

He broke through again. Just like that!

He did it again! Why 'again'?

He had done this so many times. At the beginning, he was level six of Spirit Origin Stage. And then he kept breaking through, over and over again. Then he broke through Spirit Origin Stage and

reached Dream Origin Stage. Two days later, he broke through again?

That sounded just like making up a story. It was just like a fool story if nobody actually saw it happen!

Zhan Yunfei, who had been watching Ye Chongxiao, fell off the tree when he saw it because of surprise.

At that moment, he was so shocked that he forgot to shield himself with spiritual qi.

[Damn it!]

[He just reached level one the day before yesterday! Isn't it?]

[Heavens! You are god!]

[You just reached level two? Just like that? What the hell do you want?]

[Are you going to write a legend of yourself? Are you going to be a myth?]

[No matter how talented, how good, how brilliant a cultivator is, it has to be at least half a year to break through one level! How can you do it like a rocket?]

[It can't be sicker! It can't be more monstrous! A freak!]

Before anybody came up to hold him, he got up himself and ran away. He coughed, trying to cover his embarrassment. He operated martial art to recover the small wounds on his face. There were many people who had seen him fall, so he shouted angrily, "What are you looking at? What? Want to see my bird? Go take off your pants and have a look at your stupid tiny p*nis!"

The disciples were speechless.

[Come on, Master Zhan. We are caring for you. We just want to check if you are okay. Listen to yourself... You actually told us to look at our p*nis... That... That's unbelievably rude.]

[We actually don't care about being offended. However, what about yourself? Why do you have to ruin your own reputation... Look how you make yourself look embarrassed... You must break a record on this aspect in our sect...]

In fact, none of them knew that Zhan Yunfei was too embarrassed and also astonished to keep a decent manner at the moment. He had a scary, frightening, and astonishing conclusion about Ye Chongxiao...

He reckoned, one day after, Ye Chongxiao would be improved greatly. Even if he might still not be able to defeat a level five Dream origin Stage disciple, he would successfully make the fight last for a long time!

Zhan Yunfei was a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator. He had profound eyes and sharp mind.

The next day, in the combat, Ye Chongxiao was fighting against a level five Dream Origin Stage cultivator. Just as Zhan Yunfei expected, they were closely matched in the fight!

In the end, with Zhan Yunfei's permission, that level five disciple fought with full power and finally defeated Ye Chongxiao...

Zhan Yunfei even had a feeling that Ye Chongxiao didn't really fight in full power.

At least he didn't fight as hard as he could.

Ye Chongxiao was still improving during the fight that day. He kept the combat ongoing because he wanted to practice more so as to stabilize his new strength in the new level. In fact, if he fought with full effort, he would very likely win the combat!

That night.

Ye Chongxiao shouted loudly. That five level disciple stepped back over a dozen steps. Three footprints appeared on his chest.

The entire place became silent.

Chapter 869: Visitor in Cold Moon Palace!

Everybody was stunned.

What stunned everybody was the failure of the level five Dream Origin Stage disciple. He lost it, in an unsightly way!

That disciple wasn't that powerful. In fact, most of the disciples present were stronger than him. They surely could defeat him in a easy and unsightly way!

However, what was so stunning was that the person who defeated him was Ye Chongxiao, a young disciple who had just reached level two of Dream Origin Stage. One day earlier, he was just unsightly defeated by the level five disciple.

One day after, it became a totally different story!

Was it a joke? Were they playing?

After looking at the three footprints on that disciple's chest, everybody was clear.

Those were not some ordinary footprints!

Ye Chongxiao's last strike had broken the opponent's protection. He jumped up and spun in the air, and then kicked on that disciple's chest twenty-seven times in an invisible speed!

Luckily, he was only level two of Dream Origin Stage. If he was any stronger, this solid twenty-seven kick strikes on the chest would definitely break the disciple's inner organs into pieces!

If Ye Chongxiao could thoroughly break the qi shield of the level five disciple, he could definitely do that. To break that shield, he needed to be level three!

It was obvious to everybody that Ye Chongxiao had learned thoroughly well about the opponent's moves, but he was only level two. And he could only make an attack of level two!

The kicks were definitely wonderful moves. It impressed

everybody, and gave everybody a lesson at the same time!

Ye Chongxiao was such an experienced fighter in the combat!

It wasn't about his cultivation level at all. It was all about his battle experience!

The whole place was silent. Zhan Yunfei was totally shocked again.

Why 'again'?

We all know why. I won't explain it!

After this, a level six Dream Origin Stage disciple took the place to fight Ye Xiao...

Ye Xiao was alerted.

When he was breaking through and reached level two, he felt a few hostile qi around him. It disappeared immediately, but he sensed it.

He was sure that qi was from somebody among the disciples.

He thought that maybe somebody was jealous. However, when he just defeated the level five disciple, that qi appeared again!

It was more obvious this time.

There was even intent of killing hidden in that qi!

Ye Xiao was alerted!

[What is it?]

[Somebody inside Cold Moon Palace wants to kill me?]

He couldn't track the source but he knew it was there. He was sure!

After that, he became much more cautious in the fights. Zhan Yunfei had been watching him all the time. That hostile qi didn't appear again...

...

One day.

An alarm bell rang in Cold Moon Palace.

It was resounding among the mountains.

The next moment, disciples were gathered up.

It was a call-up for the superior disciples in the sect.

Zhan Yunfei was stunned. He stopped and then said, "Disciples beyond Dao Origin Stage should go to the main hall immediately."

After that, he flew out first. It seemed to be an urgent situation.

Dozens of disciples beyond level six of Dream Origin Stage were shocked. So was Ye Xiao.

"What happened? Elder Zhan was acting weird!" Ye Xiao asked.

As an experienced cultivator who used to live in Qing-Yun Realm, of course he knew what it meant.

However, what interested him most was that... how powerful the enemy was, that the leadership of Cold Moon Palace would panic like that?

It must be somebody powerful.

[Is it the mad lady, Xuan Bing?]

"Nobody knows yet." The level six disciple who had been fighting Ye Xiao was still gasping, "But it must be pretty bad." He actually felt tired after fighting against Ye Xiao. He was still gasping and his heart was beating fast...

After he said that, the welcome music of the sect started to sound.

"What? It seems some important figures are coming?" The disciples were all surprised.

Ye Xiao was surprised too.

First it was the alarm. That meant somebody activated the array

of Cold Moon Palace. That activated the alarm. However, it became the welcome music after that...

[What is going on?]

"It turns out not a dangerous situation. I guess we have some important guests. Shall we go have a look at them?" A middle-aged level nine Dream Origin Stage disciple seemed excited about it.

"Brother Cao, we don't know what happened yet. I am not sure it is okay to do this. What if we got caught... That would be..." Another disciple replied.

That Cao disciple laughed. "Don't worry. We will see them from distance. What can we do wrong? It happened before anyway... Prime Master won't blame us."

"Cao Daqi, to watch the important etiquette event without permission, you will get punished." Another disciple frowned. He looked at Cao. "I don't care if you get caught. Think about Ye Chongxiao. He has just become one of us. Do you want him to be punished?"

Cao laughed and said, "He is the reason why I want to do that. He is the super genius of our sect. He comes from the lower realm. Look at him. We have an opportunity to see something interesting in Qing-Yun Realm. Why don't we let him see something eye-opening? Besides, we will be far from them. We will just have a look from a long distance. I believe the elders will forgive us. We did that before, remember?"

"Chongxiao has been working so hard during the recent days. He must be exhausted after all the combats. He has to rest and relax. Do you want him to keep his head down in the combat all the time? He is going to go out to the martial world one day after all. It is better to let him know what the world is like out there."

Cao Daqi was serious. "Besides, we are in seclusion at the moment. We have all our force in the sect now. Do you think there

is any problem we can't solve?"

The others thought that he was reasonable.

Besides, they were all curious about the visitor. Nobody objected to it anymore.

Ye Xiao didn't feel right about it. So he tried to turn it down. "You can go. I think I should have a rest here. I need to practice what I learned."

Over a dozen of the other disciples started to laugh. "Come on, you are brilliant enough! Do you want to knock us all down in one day?"

Ye Xiao still refused to go.

He didn't find anything wrong, but he felt it with his instinct. He knew it was not any suspicious thing, but he just felt something wrong. He couldn't tell the reason.

...

Chapter 870: Two Great Prime Masters

"Ye Chongxiao, don't turn up your nose at us! We have been here to help you practice for so many days..." Cao Daqi pretended to be mad. "What harm could be done if we just have a look at them?"

He started to drag Ye Xiao away without more talking.

Even Xiao Mufei said with a big smile, "Go then. It's not a big deal. The more you see, the more you know... After all, you have been exhausted for days. It's time to get yourself relaxed."

Ye Xiao kept refusing it, yet the disciples didn't listen to him. They dragged Ye Xiao with them and sneaked out.

Xiao Mufei didn't go though. Xiao Rongrong didn't like to be among the crowd. He felt a bit tired after all, so he stayed to rest.

On the mountain path of Cold Moon Palace.

Prime Master Yue Changtian stood in front of his people, looking like a saint.

Behind him, there were three elders and nine great disciples.

Everybody looked solemn.

One, three, nine.

What a high standard greeting etiquette.

Ye Xiao and other disciples were hiding on a huge tree hundreds of meters away. They were watching at the path where the visitors would come from.

Ye Xiao absolutely didn't want to come. Besides, he felt something wrong about all this. However, the others were too enthusiastic. He was dragged over.

He was definitely not strong enough to resist if they forced him to come. He had to come with them at the end. However, he tried to stay in a most covert spot.

The fog was broken and many shadows were getting closer from inside the fog. The first person who ran out from the fog wore a blood red robe. He was tall. Three locks of dark hairs hung on his chest. His eyes seemed shining with a bright glow. He looked elegant and proud.

He walked step by step over to the sect casually, as if there was a sun shining upon his head. As he walked, he looked more like a king descending to the mortal world.

Ye Xiao looked at that man and he was shocked.

It was the Prime Master of Saint Sunlight Sect, Heaven's Sword, Wu Huitian.

Heaven's Sword spares no life!

It was the moniker of this Prime Master.

Beside him, there were three men. They kept staying so close to him. They seemed casual but actually walked rather carefully. As they were moving, they had covered every direction to their Prime Master!

They were performing the famous Three Elites Array.

Three elites array covered all sides to protect one man. As long as the three men still breathed, it was always an invincible shield!

The three level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators performed the Three Elites Array so as to protect their Prime Master.

Even Wu Fa, the world's best cultivator in the world, couldn't get close to Wu Huitian before he killed all the three elites!

Wu Huitian walked out the fog.

He was definitely an important guest to Cold Moon Palace.

However, he was not the only important guest.

On the other side, in the dense fog, another four people were showing up.

The one who led the way wore all white. On his white clothes, it glowed with starlights. That white robe was made with Starlight Silk. It was a treasure, a peerless armor, Cloudy Star Robe.

It was the special top treasure of Saint Starlight Sect!

It was said that this robe could withstand a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator's attacks for eight minutes and protect the owner from getting hurt. It was the most valuable defensive treasure in the Qing-Yun Realm!

The only person in the world who could wear this robe was the Prime Master of Saint Starlight Sect, Yun Xiran.

There were also three level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators around him, setting up a Three Elites Array to protect him!

The two Prime Masters visited their ally, Cold Moon Palace, in such a protection. Ye Xiao felt that something must have gone wrong.

[You come to your ally's place, performing such an protection array. Why?]

The two group of people arrived at the same time. Yue Changtian was a bit surprised. He couldn't help twisting his mouth for a second.

"Cough... Prime Master Wu, Prime Master Yun, your presence lights up Cold Moon Palace." Yue Changtian greeted them with some frequently used compliments. He said, "However, are you here for revenge? Or refuge? Why are you making such a protection? I am rather timid. I don't think I can handle this..."

As he talked, he looked around the two Prime Masters.

Wu Huitian humphed, "Yue Changtian, just cut the chitchat. We are the same. I believe you will bring three of your elites with you too when you go out. Three Elites Array isn't the specialty of me and Saint Sunlight Sect."

Yun Xiran smiled blandly and said, "Prime Master Yue is being frank to us after all. Look at Prime Master Yue, he doesn't dare to step out his place now, does he?"

Yue Changtian was angry. "What did you say? You two are inside my place. Why do you have to keep talking a mouthful of sh*t? Can you just cut the bullsh*t and come in for some tea?"

Wu Huitian walked ahead and said, "Of course I am going to have some tea. However, do you know there is a disaster getting close to us, the three factions."

Yue Changtian was surprised. He thought for a while and said, "Would it be... Is Jun Yinglian of Sky Ice Palace... out for revenge?"

"That's right." Yun Xiran smiled bitterly. "Jun Yinglian got out the mountains with her sword in hand. She didn't cover her trace. However, she went to Qiong-Hua Palace first. After that, she was gone."

"We have set up many sentries to keep a watch on her... But... all our men are killed! Nobody knows where she is right now. Nobody knows where she is heading next..."

The three of them talked in a low voice while walking. Only the three of them could hear each other.

Yue Changtian was frightened. "This is a huge event... It is a huge event for the three factions..."

He felt worried. He might not be safe anymore.

For a long time, even the ponds, where he had been proud of, which he recognized as the safest place in the sect, was stolen in. He wasn't so confident about the security system in the sect anymore...

[If Jun Yinglian kills her way into the sect...]

Yue Changtian felt cold on his neck.

...

Chapter 871: Murder!

Yue Changtian thought that he was equal to Jun Yinglian in cultivation. However, if she was determined to sacrifice herself to take revenge... it was at least eighty hundred percent she would succeed!

In fact, even a twenty percent possibility was too much a risk for Yue Changtian! He wouldn't dare to take it!

What if he was killed... that was not just kidding!

"That woman actually came out..." Yue Changtian's face turned pale, "I never felt right to kill Xiao Monarch. Now it's our retribution..."

"Who is it?" At the moment, Wu Huitian suddenly turned over and shouted to a direction.

The others were shocked.

The three Dao Origin Stage cultivators behind Wu Huitian suddenly made their strikes at the same time. Three streams of bright sword lights shot out!

When the sword lights were still shooting in the air, it burst with thunderclaps!

As they moved, thunderclaps followed!

Three top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators moved in full power! That shocked the world!

Although three of them made three strikes, it only sounded once.

They were definitely performing a perfect cooperation.

The sword lights rapidly shot to a huge tree hundreds of meters away!

That was where Ye Xiao and the other disciples were hiding!

Those Dream Origin Stage disciples were stunned.

The dense murderous qi had suddenly covered them all. At that moment, nobody made any reaction. They were totally shocked and sweating. They stared at the sword lights getting close to them but couldn't move away!

They couldn't come up with the idea to run away. Their minds were blown so hard. That suppression from the attacks had stunned them all!

The tragedy wasn't stopped. The crowd burst into painful exclamation.

The sword lights shot through them but didn't slow down at all. It kept shooting forward to the mountains far away behind them. Behind the sword lights was a mass of blood!

The three sword lights actually got through every one of the disciples who were hiding there!

After the sword lights took some lives, and they continued shooting, eventually hitting a mountain thousands meter away. The mountain collapsed! Rocks flew about in every direction!

Ye Xiao had been hiding behind everybody. He had sensed something wrong before this. It wasn't appropriate to peek at the guests after all...

While he was thinking, he slowly stepped back.

It wasn't easy to leave the crowd though. The disciple brother who grabbed him here didn't let him go at all. "Chongxiao, you have no idea... You may not have a second chance in your life to see this again..."

While he was speaking, they heard the bursting sound!

After that, they were nearly blinded by the glaring sword lights. Ye Xiao was alerted! He was suddenly drenched in cold sweat! He felt like he was trapped by a strong net, and even his mind was locked!

He felt terribly inflexible!

That was not a strange feeling for Ye Xiao though. In fact, he was quite familiar with it.

When a man was facing a fatal danger which was getting closer fast and he was stunned by the overwhelming suppression, he would have that feeling.

When a man had this feeling, he would die!

Ye Xiao had died once. He was familiar with this feeling.

At this moment, he thought, "It's a trap!"

The whole thing was well prepared. It was a murder plan!

That Disciple Brother Cao must be the bad guy!

[Cao Daqi, if I can survive this, I will slaughter your entire clan!]

Ye Xiao was furious. The unwillingness had filled his entire body! He made a muffled shout and forcibly twisted his body.

He felt like he was going to break his waist, however, after using every bit of his energy to try to move aside, his body only slightly moved!

That was all!

At the same time, he felt it cold on the neck and the chest. Two sword lights went through the skin of his neck and his chest.

He did save himself by making that slight move. The attack cut off a piece of his flesh and a piece of bone, but he was alive.

While feeling lucky about it, he felt cold in the chest.

It was the feeling of being blown by the wind. Suddenly, he felt it difficult to breathe.

Another sword light got into his chest and left through his back before it shot away fast with a thunderclap!

Three sword lights, he slightly dodged the two of them, but got

hit by the third!

It went through the center of his chest!

It was definitely aiming at Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao couldn't believe what just happened. He looked down at his chest and saw that hole. He felt blank in the head!

[Am I... going to die again now?]

[I... No... I don't want to...]

Ye Xiao glanced at that Disciple Brother Cao. He looked unbelieving too. There was a hole on his chest too...

He was also killed!

Before Ye Xiao had the chance to question him, he died!

All the disciples around were killed!

Forty-six men, no exception!

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly.

[What if I insisted in not coming?]

[Cao Daqi would definitely force me to come... No matter how I refused, I wouldn't be able to escape this... Zhan Yunfei was gone by then.]

[This is specially designed to get me killed!]

[They want me to die!]

[Cao Daqi would do whatever it takes to finish his job.]

[However, he didn't know... He is the one who dragged me here. He would never escape the investigation. Besides, whoever wants me die will never let him live. They won't leave any witness of their crime. No matter what, Cao Daqi is definitely dead.]

[Is he a spy who works for Saint Sunlight Sect? A spy who is willing to die?]

He couldn't hold on to it anymore. His sight turned dark and he

fell down on the floor.

Blood poured out from the hole on his chest, creating a blood pond on the ground.

...

Chapter 872: Terribly Shameless!

When Wu Huitian was shouting, Yue Changtian frowned. [You are in Cold Moon Palace, my place. Do you think there will be an assassination against you? Even though you are frightened by Jun Yinglian, you don't have to be alerted like this! Besides, I don't feel any hostility over there.]

[Wait. What? You just make a strike?]

[Wait... No! That's not right!]

Zhan Yunfei suddenly shouted, "No!"

And then Yue Changtian saw the blood rolling up over where the sword lights were shooting to!

It was all red over there!

"Who's there?" Yue Changtian's face turned pale.

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot... -

Everybody moved over.

They all went to the place and what they could see was a mess. Forty-six men lying on the floor, drenched in their own blood.

Yue Changtian's face was pale. "Why are these people here? Who... are... they?"

Zhan Yunfei looked extremely pale at the moment, as if there was no blood running inside his body!

He turned over and stared at Wu Huitian with fierceness. His eyes were turning red.

Suddenly, his long sword appeared in his hand. - Shoot! - After a great thunderclap, he was rushing over to Wu Huitian!

Man-sword complex!

He was trying to do an instant kill!

As the sword light shined, his voice shouted out like thunder-striking, "Wu Huitian! Go to hell!"

That sword attack contained every bit of his life energy, soul energy, and everything he had... It was burning!

He was extremely furious and also aggrieved!

Everybody felt the grievance and the anger in him!

In Cold Moon Palace, except the three grandmasters, Zhan Yunfei was the one closest to Ye Chongxiao. He looked indifferent and cold, but deep in his heart, he liked Ye Chongxiao.

In his heart, Ye Chongxiao was the only hope their sect had.

At this moment, he made the powerful strike without hesitation. His head was going to explode.

Wu Huitian was not far away from him.

The three Dao Origin Stage cultivators of Wu Huitian had just made an attack. They didn't have time to defend Zhan Yunfei's attack right away. Zhan Yunfei's attack was so surprising. It seemed Wu Huitian was not going to make it this time.

However, the truth was, Wu Huitian had been prepared for this. When Zhan Yunfei made the attack, Wu Huitian flew up fast like a red cloud. It looked slow but was in fact really fast. He not only escaped Zhan Yunfei's attack, but also moved over a hundred meters away.

Zhan Yunfei was totally lost in anger. He wouldn't let it go easily. He kept going up after Wu Huitian with fierce attacks!

- Puff! -

Suddenly, a jade flute appeared. He used the flute to block Zhan Yunfei's sword and shouted angrily, "Have you lost your god damn mind?"

Not only Wu Huitian, even Yue Changtian thought Zhan Yunfei was crazy.

[What is happening?]

[Why would Zhan Yunfei suddenly do such a crazy thing before anything is clarified and investigated?]

[He actually attacked the Prime Master of Saint Sunlight Sect, which was the strongest among the three factions! He is risking his life!]

"Yunfei, stop!" Yue Changtian shouted with a dark face, "Why are you so hotheaded? It still needs an investigation for this. Prime Master Wu will give us an explanation for sure. Stop it now!"

Zhan Yunfei glared and said, "There was... There was..."

He spoke with a long shout, "Ye Chongxiao was among them!"

Everybody of Cold Moon Palace was stunned.

Yue Changtian trembled! He was shocked! Suddenly, his face turned deadly pale.

He slowly turned around and stared at Wu Huitian, who was about a dozen meters away!

Before this, Zhan Yunfei was the only person who wanted to kill Wu Huitian. Now even Yue Changtian, the Prime Master, wanted to kill him!

Wu Huitian looked confused. He said, "Prime Master Yue, can you tell me what is going on now? Why would those people hide there peeking at us when I just arrived at your place? And you, Zhan Yunfei, what was that? How dare you attack me? Are you trying to start a war between our sects?"

As he spoke, he became angry. "Yue Changtian, what do you want? How can you treat your brother sect like this? Do you want to kill me in your sect? You... Cold Moon Palace... You have to give me a fair explanation today!"

"This is such a humiliation. I can't accept this!" he spoke angrily and put his hand on his sword.

He tried to look righteous though!

He sounded like he was terribly wronged!

On the other side, Yun Xiran was also shocked and confused. He spoke with confusion and anger, "Yue Changtian, what do you want? Do you want to kill us all? You want us all to die so that Cold Moon Palace could become the strongest sect, the only faction? Is it?"

Yue Changtian looked at both of them. He was shaking because of fury. After a while, he gritted his teeth and said, "Good... You two... Good! Brilliant! Perfect!"

"What about us?" Yun Xiran spoke with his eyes half closed. "Yue Changtian, you better make it clear. When we just got here, there were dozens of people hiding behind that tree. Are you sure what they were thinking? Maybe they were hostile to us; maybe they wanted to hurt us; maybe they wanted to ambush us..."

"Do you know what the current situation is? Jun Yinglian, that crazy woman, is coming at any second. Prime Master Wu was being cautious, so he finished them all. That was reasonable. What wrong has he done? Besides, because Prime Master Wu noticed it first, so he made the attack. If I noticed it first, I would do no different. What is the problem?"

What a Prime Master of a great sect! He kept talking irresponsible and sarcastic remarks, yet every word was perfunctorily right. Maybe it was arguable that the dozens of people weren't hiding there for any murderous intents!

In fact, they were all dead. Nobody could stand out and clarify the truth!

Wu Huitian looked annoyed. He said, "Prime Master Yun just said what I want to say. Why are you so angry about this? Oh, I see. Those people who hid there waiting to assassinate me, were they your people? I am confused now. We are inside your sect. Why did

you set up an ambush there? Were you going to attack us?"

Yue Changtian showed him a dark face. He said in a cold voice, "We have known each other for so many years. We know each other. Don't be so childish now. Can you?"

...

Chapter 873: On the Verge of a Fight!

While they were talking, a few level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators of Cold Moon Palace had arrived at that big tree.

They kept checking on the bodies, trying to find a few survivors.

As they checked more, their faces turned darker.

"Prime Master... All dead..." an elder moved fast over Yue Changtian and spoke solemnly in a low voice.

"All dead..." Yue Changtian was shaking. His face turned deadly pale.

"Ye Chongxiao... was hit on the chest. It went in his chest and out his back... It's incurable..." the elder said this in mind connection. Nobody else heard it. "His heart was wounded. Normally, he should have been dead by now... However, although he isn't breathing... he still has a pulse..."

Yue Changtian looked still angry and sad. He shouted, "Take all the disciples' bodies back inside. We must seek justice for this! We will not accept any unwarranted accusation!"

"Yes," the elder answered with a shout. He gathered some other to carry all the forty-six bodies back.

On the other side, Wu Huitian squinted at the bodies and said, "Prime Master Yue, who speaks louder doesn't have to be right. You still need to give me an explanation! What? Are you going to approve it with silence?"

Yue Changtian looked like smiling but actually not. "Come on. Enough is enough. Be honest to yourself, will you? What explanation do you want? Do you really want one? What? I set up over forty Dream Origin Stage disciples there in order to kill you, a level nine Dao Origin Stage master cultivator? How about that? Huh? By the way, Prime Master of Saint Sunlight Sect murdered my men and even arbitrarily and aggressively forced us to give him

an explanation. What is your explanation then?"

His word was like a sharp sword.

It was like a sword stabbing right back to Wu Huitian.

No matter how shameless Wu Huitian was, he couldn't make any runaround. He turned over and looked into Yue Changtian's eyes. What he saw was a pair of cold and vicious eyes. He felt chilled inside his heart.

Truth was truth. Those who hid behind that tree were all Dream Origin Stage disciples. It was incontestable.

Even though they were all dead, it could be tested.

That couldn't be faked.

Nearly fifty men were all killed by three sword lights at one time. Even though the sword strikes were from three level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators, it proved the truth that the forty-six men were too much weaker. If they weren't all just Dream Origin Stage, they wouldn't have all died under that sword light attack!

Forty-six Dream Origin Stage cultivators trying to assassinate Wu Huitian... that was such a joke!

Even if Wu Huitian stood still on the ground, those cultivators would never be able to kill him!

"We have a powerful enemy out there. She could be a sound of the wind, a grass on the mountain. It is always better to be alerted. Those men are all just Dream Origin Stage cultivators. No big deal. What? Prime Master Yue, are you going to hold on to it?"

On the other side, Yun Xiran frowned and said, "Jun Yinglian has come out to the martial world with her long sword. She is aiming at the three factions. Prime Master Yue, are you going to turn against us on such a small issue? Or do you want to kill dozens of Saint Sunlight Sect low-level disciples back?"

"Small issue?" Yue Changtian shouted with anger and grievance.

He was disappointed and chilled in the heart.

[Low-level disciple?]

[Is Ye Chongxiao just a low-level disciple?]

[He is the hope of our sect! His death will be a fatal strike to Cold Moon Palace!]

At the moment, Yue Changtian even thought about killing the eight guests into pieces!

He wanted to keep their dead bodies in Cold Moon Palace forever!

[That's right. Why don't I just do it? I just need to give an order and they will all die here. Two Prime Masters and six level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators, all dead. Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect will be utterly weakened. They ruined my future. I should destroy their best forces. That is fair!]

As he had such idea, he couldn't keep it from rising up in his head. His eyes were extremely cold. The expression in his eyes was unstable.

Wu Huitian and Yun Xiran noticed it sensitively. They were a bit scared.

They didn't expect Yue Yuntian would have such a drastic reaction.

It was true. They came to Cold Moon Palace to do two things. One was to talk about how they should deal with Jun Yinglian and her hatred. The other was to kill the genius of Cold Moon Palace, whose name was Ye Chongxiao.

They needed Cold Moon Palace to cooperate on the first, yet they only needed a chance to accomplish the latter.

It was a talented young disciple they wanted to kill. No matter how much potential he had, all they needed was just a chance!

The two great sects had many spies inside Cold Moon Palace. They knew everything about Ye Chongxiao. They knew no less

than what Yue Changtian knew.

The difference was that they got the information one day later.

In the beginning, the two Prime Masters thought that Ye Chongxiao was just a talented disciple like other talented disciples. They didn't pay much attention to it.

There had been so many talented people known as super genius, great genius, peerless genius, etc, but seldom of them eventually became real powerful figures! Even if there was going to be a Dao Origin Stage master cultivator called Ye Chongxiao in Cold Moon Palace, it wouldn't change the fact that Cold Moon Palace was the weakest among the three factions!

However, when Wu Huitian and Yun Xinran knew Ye Chongxiao actually passed all the three months special training, they were surprised. Nobody ever truly completed all the three months special training in the history. Wu Huitian and Yun Xinran had also been through the special training before. They surely knew what it was. That was how Ye Chongxiao caught their attention. After that, they got to know Ye Chongxiao kept breaking through like crazy in a short time...

Within five months, Ye Chongxiao broke through all the way up to level two of Dream Origin Stage from only level four of Spirit Origin Stage. In the first three months, he was doing the special training...

That meant he had actually just spent over one month to finish a great upgrade, which would take normal cultivators over ten years to accomplish!

Besides, he had the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish inside him. That was a great cultivation power. They finally decided not to let it go on like that.

They reckoned that within one year, Ye Chongxiao would be a horrible opponent that was rather difficult to kill.

Once Ye Chongxiao rose up, Cold Moon Palace would also rise up.

Cold Moon Palace would no longer be the weakest of the three factions.

In simpler words, Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect would be surpassed.

That was the last thing the two Prime Masters wanted to see.

At that moment, Jun Yinglian happened to be out on the martial world. The two of them made a plan together and arranged to kill Ye Chongxiao. After that, they would discuss with the Cold Moon Palace the affair about Jun Yinglian...

They even gave a tough order to several important spies in Cold Moon Palace to get Ye Chongxiao to the certain position, and then they killed all of them!

They even planned to kill their own men around Ye Chongxiao so as to get it done clean!

They both thought that even though Ye Chongxiao was a talented man, he wouldn't have an important role in the sect within such a short time. Yue Changtian might be pissed, but he wouldn't hurt the relationship of the three factions just for a young rookie.

Cold Moon Palace had always been the weakest in the three factions. Jun Yinglian was out there trying to take her revenge. Considering all the current factors, they believed Yue Changtian wouldn't turn against them...

Wu Huitian even wanted to just kill Ye Chongxiao directly and then apologize for it. He thought even after that, Ye Chongxiao would still sit down peacefully and talk about the next topic, Jun Yinglian...

That was why they were so confident. However, unexpectedly, people in Cold Moon Palace were all exasperated... They even wanted to start a fight against them immediately!

The two Prime Masters looked into Yue Changtian's eyes. They felt the terrible horror inside those eyes.

Suddenly, both of them felt that things were going to be out of control soon.

People of the Cold Moon Palace were all intending to kill the eight guests now!

One mistake, and the big fight would be triggered!

Wu Huitian, Yun Xiran and their Dao Origin Stage disciples, the eight of them were a super powerful team indeed. However, they were inside Cold Moon Palace, facing all the powerful force of Cold Moon Palace. If the fight was started, the eight of them would definitely die in this place!

Cold Moon Palace would pay a heavy price for that too!

"Since Prime Master Yue wouldn't concern about our relationship, I guess we are not welcome here today. We will leave now!" Wu Huitian coldly said, "I killed the wrong people. I was too sensitive. If there is anything you want from me, I will send people to take it back to you, as a compensation!"

"Farewell!" Wu Huitian looked angry and sad, as if he was wronged. He waved his sleeve and prepared to leave.

...

Chapter 874: Survival!

Apparently, Wu Huitian was scared. He sensitively noticed Cold Moon Palace's killing intent. He was afraid Yue Changtian would eventually make a tough decision. Yun Xiran might be fine. He didn't kill the disciples after all. However, Wu Huitian was definitely going to be aimed!

"You can't leave!" A sword light shined again. Zhan Yunfei stopped him like a spear standing on the way. His eyes were sharp like his sword. He said, "You killed so many people of our sect. Now you want to leave after saying some f*cking useless words? Not so easy! Compensation? What do you think you can give to make up for Ye... for the dozens of elites' lives?"

The point of Zhan Yunfei's sword was shaking. It kept making a harsh sound. A mass of energy gathered at the point of the sword, shining cold with lights.

Apparently, Zhan Yunfei was ready to risk his life in this fight.

Behind Yue Changtian, several elders were waiting quietly. They looked indifferent. Their eyes looked peaceful. They didn't seem going to start fighting. However, those who were familiar with them surely knew that they were actually gathering spiritual qi on the palms. As long as Yue Changtian gave the order, they would rush out and attack without any hesitation!

All they needed was an order.

That was all!

Yue Changtian was still hesitating.

He was considering the consequence of the fight!

If this fight started, the eight of them would definitely die in Cold Moon Palace. It would be a joke if Cold Moon Palace couldn't kill several cultivators in their own place!

Even though the eight cultivators were all in the top league, it wouldn't change the result!

What then?

If the two Prime Masters died, the three factions would burst into a big war. The battle would spread everywhere. Eventually, Cold Moon Palace would be destroyed and the other two sects would be seriously damaged!

That was the consequence everybody could think of.

[Is it worth it? To sacrifice over one hundred thousand disciples and the tens of thousand years sect for Ye Chongxiao?]

Yue Changtian had thought of an alternative solution. Maybe he could just get Wu Huitian killed. He was sure that if Cold Moon Palace only planned to kill Wu Huitian alone, even Yun Xiran would be glad to help. However, Cold Moon Palace would have to be the vanguard once the war started. After the war, Cold Moon Palace and Saint Sunlight Sect would be damaged, while Saint Starlight Sect would become the only powerful faction! Yun Xiran would lead the three factions!

Yun Xiran and his Saint Starlight Sect would absolutely like to do that. However, Yue Changtian wouldn't!

No matter which plan Yue Changtian chose, the consequence would be the collapse of Cold Moon Palace!

Yue Changtian was shaking in anger and sadness. He knew Ye Chongxiao was the only hope of the sect, but... should he risk the entire sect just to avenge Ye Chongxiao?

If Yue Changtian only considered himself, he would definitely draw out the sword and start the fight.

However, as the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace, he had to consider the lives of hundreds of thousands of disciples.

It seemed easy to just give an order, however, once the war

started, the disciples would all live in danger and fight in the coming years.

There might even be no Cold Moon Palace in the future!

Was it worth it?

He wouldn't dare to make the decision so recklessly!

He kept showing a dark face. He didn't let them leave, nor let the fight begin. He just stayed silent like a stone buddha.

In fact, he was waiting.

Ye Chongxiao was cut through the chest. He should be dead. However, Yue Changtian was still waiting. He was waiting for a tiny hope. The others were all dead, but Ye Chongxiao still had a pulse!

There must be a reason.

There was an opportunity.

He was waiting.

"Prime Master! What are you waiting for?" Zhan Yunfei was holding his sword. He shouted and urged Yue Changtian.

If Zhan Yunfei was strong enough to fight Wu Huitian and his three disciples, he would have done it himself. However, he wasn't. Let alone fighting four of them, he couldn't even defeat one!

Yue Changtian didn't answer.

"Yue Changtian, make the decision! What do you want now?" Wu Huitian asked coldly.

He was a cunning man and he knew it wouldn't end easily. Yun Xiran might still have a chance to leave, but Wu Huitian was definitely going to have a rough fight. He had to prepare for it before Yue Changtian made the decision!

Yue Changtian still didn't say anything.

In his world, everything else stopped.

Suddenly, somebody rushed out from the hall inside.

It was Zhu Jiutian!

He was the fastest among all in Cold Moon Palace.

Zhu Jiutian was like a shooting star getting over to Yue Changtian. He ran so far just to tell Yue Changtian something through mind connection. "He's alive!"

Yue Changtian was relieved.

However, he still looked gloomy and indifferent. "This has to be done after all. We won't forget what happened today! Wu Huitian, you can never make this up by any compensation you can promise. You will pay the price. Remember. Keep that in mind!"

Yue Changtian said something fierce. Wu Huitian heard it and felt relieved. He knew Yue Changtian was going to let him leave, otherwise, he wouldn't say much.

In the time when he was waiting, as a master cultivator, a Prime Master of a great sect, he felt like he had been touring around hell several times.

He felt like he was back from hell!

"Yue Changtian, listen to yourself. How arrogant! How overwhelming! Is there anything else you want to say?" Wu Huitian sneered.

He talked as if he didn't care, but in fact, he was pretending to be tough!

Yue Changtian blandly looked at him. "Wu Huitian, Yun Xiran, we all know what happened here today! Enough is enough. Do not push me... If you dare to say more words like that and carelessly piss me, I promise you two will lose the chance to see the sun rise again tomorrow. Maybe Cold Moon Palace will fall because of that, but you two will die a long time before that happens! What about

that?"

Wu Huitian and Yun Xiran were frightened. They looked at Yue Changtian and actually didn't dare to say anything.

Yue Changtian's face turned red and he was glaring the two of them.

...

Chapter 875: Independence of Cold Moon Palace

They had known each other for so many years. Yun Xiran and Wu Huitian both knew when Yue Changtian's face turned red like that, he was ready to kill. If they pissed him off now, things would go rather nasty.

They had done what they wanted to, so they decided not to risk their lives here.

As Yue Changtian said, even if Cold Moon Palace would be destroyed by the other two sects, the two sects would have to pay a rather heavy price for it. More importantly, their two Prime Master would die first!

"Dissidence makes it useless to talk. Let's go!" Wu Huitian pretended to be angry. He waved his sleeve and walked away.

Yue Changtian watched their backs with a dark face, veins throbbing on his hands.

"Let them leave!"

Zhan Yunfei's long sword was making a fierce sound. "Prime Master!"

He still stood on the way and wouldn't let the eight of them leave. He just stood there without moving a bit. He breathed heavily with a red face.

"I said, let them leave!" Yue Changtian clenched his teeth and repeated.

Zhan Yunfei was breathing heavily. He stared at Wu Huitian fiercely, then glanced at the three cultivators behind Wu Huitian.

He didn't want to step aside.

His old partner, Zhu Jiutian, half closed the eyes. He put one

hand on a jade plate, which was his beast space, and put the other hand on his sword.

As long as Zhan Yunfei made the attack, Zhu Jiutian would rush over to join him as fast as he could to fight side by side with his old buddy. It would be a great fight!

No matter alive or dead, he wouldn't regret it!

Wu Huitian had walked close to Zhan Yunfei. He coldly looked at Zhan Yunfei and blandly said, "Zhan Yunfei, you are merely level eight. Your soul beast died when you fought against Ye Xiao. Not to mention me, could you possibly have any chance to defeat any one of my people? What do you think you can do?"

Zhan Yunfei coldly smiled. "I will never violate my Prime Master's order. Since Prime Master said so, you are free to leave."

He then smiled, stepped aside, blandly said, "Prime Master Wu, you enlightened me. I am unable to kill you, so I have to let you go."

He looked into Wu Huitian's eyes, "However, please remember this, Prime Master Wu, I am not strong enough to kill you, but I am definitely capable of slaughtering anybody below level eight... Don't you reckon?"

It was an obvious threat!

[I can't kill you, but there are so many people in your sect that are at a lower level than me. I can kill whoever I want in them!]

Wu Huitian half closed his eyes while staring at Zhan Yunfei and nodded. "Excellent! Good for you!"

He flicked his sleeve and left.

Yun Xiran was behind him. He sneered and made a hand and fist obeisance to Yue Changtian. He coldly said, "So long!"

Yue Changtian looked indifferent. He didn't say anything and just looked at the eight men moving into the fog.

When the last person was about to disappear, Yue Changtian spoke in a low but strong voice, "From now on, Cold Moon Palace is Cold Moon Palace alone!"

That was such an important statement.

It was Yun Xiran who was walking into the fog. He was shocked and he blandly said, "Prime Master Yue, you must remember what you just said. It is too late to take it back!"

Then he left.

"I surely will remember every word I said."

They were gone.

Yue Changtian was still standing there quietly, staring at where the eight men disappeared from.

"Cold Moon Palace has been one of the three factions for a long time. We have helped each other, supported each other for a long time, but not anymore!"

"You did whatever it took, no matter how shameless it is, to kill the only hope of Cold Moon Palace. You keep suppressing us with all means. I don't think we need allies like that anymore."

"From now on, Cold Moon Palace is independent. We will never expect any help and support from others. Only after we are independent that we have the chance to really rise."

"Otherwise, we will be wiped out some day!" Yue Changtian murmured, "A man fights for his own life. A sect should also take responsibility for its future."

"One should always rely on oneself. A sect should always rely on its own power."

As he murmured, he was lost in thought. The more he thought, his eyes turned brighter.

He was convinced. He felt enlightened.

All the important figures in the sect heard their Prime Master murmuring. All their eyes were lit up.

[That's it. This is such a great decision.]

[Cold Moon Palace should have been independent for a long time!]

[We have had enough from Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect!]

"How is Ye Chongxiao now?" Yue Changtian turned over and asked.

Before anybody answered, a thunderclap sounded in the sky, as if there was a crack in the sky. Three people appeared in front of Yue Changtian. Their anger was like the bursting tide rolling over!

"Where are they?"

Lei Dadi showed up with a face full of hatred, as if he was going to swallow somebody.

"Where the hell are those bastards?" Yun Piaoliu was no more calm and steady. He shouted and the land seemed shaking because of his angry shout.

Yue Changtian smiled bitterly. "Gone."

He didn't want the three grandmasters to attack Wu Huitian and his men. That was why he let them leave so easily. The three grandmasters would very likely just kill the eight men instantly!

The three old men had extended their lives. They were in their prime cultivation status. They would never let the eight men leave unhindered!

That would be a huge problem.

As long as Ye Chongxiao was still alive, they didn't need to perish with the other two sects together!

"Gone?" Feng Wuying was furious. He looked like he was about to

swallow Yue Changtian alive. "They killed so many people of ours, and you just let them go? You set them free?"

Yue Changtian lowered his head and said, "We have to let this go for now. If I held them here, it would lead to a rather nasty consequence. I don't even want to imagine the result... Three factions... Million disciples' lives... I am afraid..."

"You bastard!"

Lei Dadi furiously scolded, "They blatantly came to our place and killed our people. Do you think they ever thought about the consequences? They don't care! Why should we? If we don't even dare to fight back in our own place, how do you think we are going to go out to the martial world?"

"Since when have you become such a coward, you god damn Prime Master?" Feng Wuying folded his arms and furiously scolded, "They are sh*tting on your head now! You actually let them go? How can you be such a coward Prime Master? Why don't you just go home and have a kid or something?"

The three old men kept scolding. Yue Changtian didn't even dare to look up.

He seemed so anguished. He lowered his head, saying nothing.

"That little bastard Wuhui actually tried to kill my disciple!" Lei Dadi was furious. "I am going to catch up with him and tear him into pieces!"

Yue Changtian was scared. He hurriedly said, "Chongxiao is alive!"

The three old men stopped rushing out and said, "Of course he is! Where is he now? Where?"

They were obviously caring for Ye Xiao.

...

Chapter 876: Between Life and Death

"Ye Chongxiao... He's in Sky Soul Hall..." Yue Changtian was nervous. He was worried that Ye Chongxiao was dead now. After all, he set the enemies free because Ye Chongxiao was alive. If he turned out to be dead, the three grandmasters would never get over it... That would be a disaster!

"Sky Soul Hall!"

The three old men were shocked.

"Is he really that seriously hurt?"

"Let's go have a look."

They didn't have time to talk to Yue Changtian anymore. - Shoot!
- The three of them all left.

They heard that Wu Huitian and the other seven men were making a big trouble in the sect and killed a couple of disciples. Ye Chongxiao was injured because of it...

Before they were told more, they rushed out from the mountaintop. They thought Ye Chongxiao was in danger, but not like dying.

Yue Changtian didn't want them to know the truth.

If they knew Ye Chongxiao was hurt so bad and didn't even breathe anymore... the three old men would have rushed out to hunt Wu Huitian...

However, as they heard Ye Chongxiao was in Sky Soul Hall, they were worried.

They knew Ye Chongxiao was in great danger!

Sky Soul Hall was the most mysterious place of the three factions.

It was the most valuable place too.

To build this hall, countless people had worked so much from generation to generation. They had even done so many evil things so as to get it done. However, it was just a half done hall.

Even though it was just unfinished and it wasn't as useful as they expected, it still had a few special functions. One of them was... when a man just died, just put his body in Sky Soul Hall, then his soul wouldn't leave!

It wouldn't be gone!

Ye Chongxiao was in Sky Soul Hall, that meant... he was dying! He could die at any second!

The three old men were anxious! They didn't have time to think about hunting Wu Huitian. What was most important for them was to make sure their beloved disciple was safe!

...

After Ye Xiao was stabbed through by that sword attack, he knew that he was totally done this time. He reckoned he would die!

He felt that his body was light-weight at that moment. He seemed floating. While he was thinking, he suddenly looked down from up in the air. He saw a body lying on the floor.

That was himself.

There was a big hole in his chest!

Ye Xiao was so experienced. He immediately had a conclusion. He died.

He was lying on the floor. Then why would he look at himself from the sky?

In fact, he knew the answer. He was so close to death. In other words, his body was dying, and his soul was separated from his body!

Maybe because he had already entered the Boundless Space, his soul could still stay there!

However, nothing could go against nature's law. His soul would perish soon after a while.

At this moment, Ye Xiao understood one thing. No matter how lucky a man was, when he died, he died.

All men must die.

Before that, he thought he had a second opportunity to live again. He thought he must be chosen. He thought he wouldn't die easily!

He believed it was his fate to stay alive!

Be believed in it. Because he believed in it, it influenced him greatly. He became bolder!

When he was facing tens of thousands of assassins, even though he had that poison, even though he knew so well about humanity, he wasn't really sure to win that battle.

Any small mistake could get him killed. If those assassins had rushed over to him more recklessly, he might have used the last bit of poison much earlier. If that happened, how could he fight against the joint force of the two great sects at the end?

When he was fighting the No. 1 cultivator in the Land of Han-Yang, Bu Jingtian, he used Brother Egg to kill Bu Jingtian in one slap. That was such a brilliant victory, but if Bu Jingtian a bit more cautious, he would find the secret in Ye Xiao's hand. That would have changed the whole thing. Ye Xiao would definitely die!

He had met many opportunities in the second life, but there had also been so many dangers. He had been so close to death for so many times. However, he always survived. Rather than that, he always got lots of profits afterwards!

Every time, he was the winner with lots of trophies! Because of that, he believed more in the idea. [I am immortal! I won't die! Heavens bless me!]

However, now he understood, he was wrong. He was so wrong!

[I shouldn't believe it is safe to be inside Cold Moon Palace! I shouldn't lose my alertness!]

[I shouldn't have put the Golden Soul Tower away just because I have been living easily. If I had the tower with me, I may have survived this!]

[I shouldn't believe I am immortal. That was simply a dream of a fool!]

[If I can survive this time, I will be more cautious about my future.]

[Because there are lots of people in the martial world. And people are the most dangerous things in the martial world.]

[I used to be such an experienced man in the martial world, but I actually forgot the first law in the martial world! I deserve this!]

[Life and death. As simple as that.]

[Nobody is truly the son of heavens.]

[God would never put all the good luck and fortune on one person!]

[God would never watch your back all the time.]

[However, will I have a chance to correct myself? To be more cautious and respectful?]

Ye Xiao sighed.

At this moment, he... he was scared. He was afraid that he wouldn't have the chance to live on!

However, when people started to lift up his dead body, he felt an irresistible power pulling his soul!

He wanted to fight it, but the power was too strong. However, he had another option right now. He could enter the Boundless Space!

He believed the marvelous Space would definitely save him from

being taken away. It was a safe way. When Gu Jinlong's physical body perished, he had thought about resurrecting on another's body. Ye Xiao wasn't a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, so his soul was not as powerful as when he was Xiao Monarch, even though he knew how to resurrect. His soul was more stable than many others, so he just had to find a new strong body to live again!

When Ye Xiao prepared to do it, he suddenly stopped. He found that the power which was pulling him away was from his own body!

...

Chapter 877: Back to Life!

It was his own body. The body was shining in red. There was a powerful force dragging him back to it!

Ye Xiao's soul didn't enter the Boundless Space. He cut off the connection to the soul and let the force drag the soul into the mass of red light.

He cut off the connection fast to be reconnected to it even faster. He regained consciousness right away. Now, he was in control of both his body and soul!

He felt agony that he couldn't describe!

Extremely painful!

He couldn't bear it!

In the first few seconds, he felt that agony, but after that, he felt thoroughly spirited!

[I... I am back to life?]

[I didn't die! Not really! As long as I am still alive, I don't mind bearing more pain!]

What surprised him most was the fact that he didn't die after his entire chest was broken!

He wondered what that red light was? He wanted to know what it meant.

After a while, he found every part of his body was covered by a power of warmth. That power was soft and vast.

It was exactly the red light.

The red light was repairing his body. It was actually coming out from inside his body...

[What is this power?]

He was lost in thoughts. Suddenly, he remembered something

from the old days.

He remembered there was a beautiful woman standing in front of him, saying, "I guess I can give you this Nine Creating Dan bead. Take it as a... compensation to you."

"This dan bead can save you eight times in your whole life."

He understood what was happening now.

It was... that woman, who was so powerful that he couldn't even imagine... Su Yeyue's master, that mysterious master cultivator. She gave him a Nine Creating Dan bead...

Meng Huaiqing!

He could sense the power repairing his heart.

It was such a marvelous power... It could nourish everything in the world...

Even though he was so badly damaged, it could still cure him!

Ye Xiao didn't know that only his soul was back to common status, yet his body was still in deep unconsciousness. Lei Dadi and the others were all around him.

"Chongxiao!"

As Lei Dadi rushed into the room, he was shocked.

Tears fell down from the old man's eyes.

Not only Lei Dadi, the other two old guys were also sobbing with tears!

The three old guys were experienced cultivators. The first sight of the big hole on their disciples's chest, they knew what it meant. There was no chance for Ye Chongxiao to survive this severe injury. Even if he wasn't completely dead yet, it didn't mean he would live!

The three old men were stricken.

They had lived for so many years and finally had a disciple they

were satisfied with! Now he was gone!

"I am going to kill Wu Huitian!" Lei Dadi turned around and rushed out the door like a wild tiger.

"Master!"

Yue Changtian held him so tight. "Master, please calm down. Chongxiao is still alive!"

"Bullsh*t!" The three old men swore at the same time. "Are you out of your god damn mind? With that hole on his chest, you are telling me he can survive? Come here, boy, let me stab you in the chest like that and let's see if you can make it! If you can survive, you can try to stop us. I can't let our disciple die for nothing. I am going to kill that son of b*tch, even if we three will be expelled from the sect!"

Yue Changtian held Lei Dadi and begged, "Master... Please... Calm down... I don't know what will happen to Chongxiao... Please have a look at him. He truly is alive... He is not breathing, but he still has a pulse... Besides, the Sky Soul Hall is working. You know what it could do. You know it wouldn't work on a dead man. Chongxiao is still alive... At least not completely dead yet..."

Yue Changtian felt Lei Dadi was like a volcano which would erupt at any second. Once it erupted, everybody would be destroyed!

However, he couldn't let go of him! He didn't dare to!

If he let go of him, Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu would definitely go after him. The three old men were always together.

The situation was that the most beloved disciple of the three old grandmasters was dead. The three old men didn't want to live anymore. They wanted to sacrifice themselves to kill Wu Huitian. In fact, not only Wu Huitian, even Yun Xiran would die along with him. Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect would be stained with blood!

However, the three old grandmasters would die too!

The two great sects would join together to take revenge on Cold Moon Palace. After that, it was the end of Cold Moon Palace!

If not because of that, Yue Changtian himself would go kill Wu Huitian!

"Even if we want revenge... even if we will start the war..." Yue Changtian shouted with sorrow and anger, "Shouldn't we at least be prepared for it..."

"We didn't prepare for anything earlier. They did this so boldly because they knew we very possibly wouldn't do anything about it. In addition, they must have also prepared for our attacks. We are unprepared for this war. That makes the chance too small on our side... Master..." Ye Changtian was nearly weeping, "Most importantly, Chongxiao isn't dead yet..."

"Bull-mother-freaking-sh*t..." Lei Da scolded, but he seemed calmed down a bit.

They were unprepared.

That was the truth. It struck the three old men.

They were indeed unprepared for this!

Nobody knew the other two factions would do such a thing!

So bodacious!

Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect had always been high-handed, but nobody knew they could be high-handed like this. They should have prepared more!

If they started the war, they would be the only unprepared one.

Yue Changtian told Wu Huitan and Yun Xiran that Cold Moon Palace would become independent. It was a start of their revenge after all.

"Cold Moon Palace had been suppressed by the other two factions for tens of thousands of years. I guess it's time to figure another way out now." Lei Dadi's eyes were full of anger. "That's still too

much. They ruined our future. That is unacceptable! We three won't die in any short time. I guess we should begin to do something!"

He turned over to look at Ye Xiao. They walked over to him and touched his nose to check his breath. He wasn't breathing. They put their hands on his wrist and found he still had a pulse. It was pulsating slowly, but it was at least still pulsating.

"What is this?" Lei Dadi was shocked.

"His entire chest is broken. He should have died for a long time... The Sky Soul Hall is working. That means he can still survive. How can a man without a complete chest live..." Feng Wuying was confused.

"Look!"

Suddenly, Yun Piaoliu shouted. He had been observing Ye Xiao.

Under the four men's watch, a dim red light was glowing over Ye Xiao's body.

They were stunned.

The red light was rising slowly, moving to his heart.

They were all confused with their eyes wide opened.

[What is going on here?]

[What is it?]

...

Chapter 878: Witnessing a Miracle!

Under their watch, the mysterious red light had gathered on his chest. The next moment, what they saw completely stunned them. The wounded heart inside the chest was recovering slowly!

The four of them were astonished!

The Sky Soul Hall was a place that only these four people could enter freely. A few elders and great disciples knew about this place, but it was still a secret to all the others. Those elders and great disciples could only enter this place when they were commanded to.

In the stories of Cold Moon Palace, the Sky Soul Hall was a place that could create a miracle.

His heart was destroyed!

Yet it could still be recovered!

The broken heart was growing. It was slowly showing the shape of a heart. The mysterious red light was performing a superior creating power. The four men felt extremely shocked!

[What?]

[Is this really happening?]

[Are we in a dream?]

It was totally silent inside Sky Soul Hall at the moment. The four of them silently watched the red light repairing Ye Xiao's body. They just felt blank in the head.

They kept thinking of all the stories, myths, and legends they had heard, even novels they had read, trying to find an explanation of what they saw. Yet they found nothing.

When the red light repaired about thirty percent of the heart, it suddenly stopped. The red light disappeared.

The four men panicked. They didn't even dare to breathe a bit heavier or to make any move.

[Is it... done?]

[What does this mean? It can't save him?]

While the four of them were about to panic, suddenly, they saw the red light showing up from everywhere around Ye Chongxiao's body and gathering again...

It was totally the same red light. It kept moving over to the heart and gathered together. This time, when it repaired the heart to about fifty percent, it disappeared again...

After a while, it showed up again and repeated it...

The four men were stunned. None of them had a clue about what was going on.

They were not Ye Xiao, so they didn't know the reason. In fact, even Ye Xiao didn't know how the Nine Creating Dan could be so marvelous.

Meng Huaqing's Nine Creating Dan was truly as she said, able to save him eight times from death!

However, it should be nine times, since there was a nine in its name. It should bring him back to life in full power...

In fact, Meng Huaqing wouldn't give him something that powerful.

What she gave Ye Xiao was a low-level Nine Creating Dan bead.

Dan beads had different levels. The top quality Nine Creating Dan beads could bring people back from death and also give him a great power. The low-level dan bead was still marvelous, since it could still bring people back to life, but it couldn't fully recover him!

What Ye Xiao had eaten was some mysterious treasure that people had never heard of in the Qing-Yun Realm. In fact, it was

just a defective dan bead.

Ye Xiao should have died under such circumstances. However, he had the protection of the Nine Creating Dan. He survived. His heart was badly broken, and even the Nine Creating Dan couldn't easily bring it back. Luckily, Boundless Space had been supplying energy to activate the capacity of the dan bead. It kept producing the creating force to fix his body.

If he didn't have anyone of the Boundless Space, East-rising Purple Qi, and Nine Creating Dan bead, he should have died long ago!

The three great forces together finally activated the marvelous renascence power. Finally, Ye Xiao survived after eight times of repairing.

That was so close. He was lucky. If he had triggered the recreating force before, he would definitely die this time!

No matter what, he survived!

However, he used up all the creating force at one time!

Yue Changtian and the three old men felt like witnessing a miracle happening before their eyes. They quietly saw that magical red light shine eight times.

It repaired thirty percent of the heart at the first time. The second time, it repaired half. The third time, it repaired seventy percent. The fourth time, it repaired ninety percent. The fifth time, the heart was fully repaired. The sixth time, it started to repair the chest. The hole was getting smaller and smaller. The seventh time, the hole was nearly recovered...

The eighth time, after the red light shined on him, under the four men's watch, the wound on Ye Chongxiao's chest was completely cured. There was a pink scar on the chest, showing that he had been severely injured!

The three old men couldn't believe what just happened. They

hurriedly gathered over to Ye Xiao and checked on him. After that, they were totally overjoyed. Ye Xiao's heart was beating heavily. The pulse in him was strong. He was just like any healthy man, sleeping peacefully... There was even a flush on his face...

It could be easily told that he was totally fine now!

He was back to life!

He didn't die!

That was a true miracle!

Lei Dadi was shaking. His lips were shaking, his face was flushing, and he kept rubbing his own hands. He said, "God damn... God damn... Heaven and lord... God damn..."

He was too excited to say a complete sentence at the moment.

...

Chapter 879: Death Is a Perfect Protection

The other two old guys weren't doing any better than Lei Dadi though. They kept widely opening their eyes, with a flushed face, acting like two bridegrooms, unable to stop shaking...

Yue Changtian, as if in a dream, swallowed and spoke in a low voice, "What... What just happened?"

"Who the hell should I ask?" Lei Dadi rolled his eyes up.

"You are my disciple uncle. I am your disciple nephew... When I see something I can't understand, surely I will ask you about it," Yue Changtian spoke dully.

Lei Dadi had nothing to respond to that. He was a bit disgraced even. He just threatened, "Do you want to get beaten up? I will help you with that if you ask me to!"

Yue Changtian stopped talking.

The four of them were curious and stunned by the magical scene, but they didn't have any way to find out what exactly it was.

"Could it be... Ye Chongxiao, is he a reincarnation of a star in heavens? He is abnormally lucky and he seems to be blessed always!" Yue Changtian thought for a long time and came up with such a possibility. When he talked, he trembled briefly.

Then he widely opened his eyes. He was apparently astonished by his assumption!

[A reincarnation of a god?]

[That... That is possible though!]

The three old men were shaking too. They looked at each other but said nothing.

The four of them looked at each other and realized that it might be a really important event in history.

"First of all, we should keep this a secret. We can't let anybody else know that Chongxiao is alive!" Lei Dadi solemnly spoke, "We can't let those people know. We can't even let our people know. We can't take any risk."

"That's right. Chongxiao is a big target. He is too heaven-defying. That's why the two sects planned to assassinate him. However, after this, it is a perfect situation for him to hide from everybody's notice."

"That's true. Everybody thinks he is dead now!"

Yue Changtian was enlightened.

"Death! A perfect protection!"

"We are the only people in the world who knows Chongxiao is still alive. We shall never tell anybody out there!"

"Then nobody will know about this. It will remain a secret."

"However, we can't let Chongxiao show up in the sect."

"Since he had such a great fortune to come back from death, he will someday become the greatest figure in Cold Moon Palace!"

"In order to keep Chongxiao safe, we should announce his death later. Other than that, we should announce that we have officially broken off relations with Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect."

"I know we should tell others Chongxiao is dead. I don't understand how we are going to train him from now on?" Yue Changtian was confused.

"Just let him go out to the martial world." Lei Dadi looked at Yue Changtian. "We should always let a grown eaglet go out to fly! The more he experienced, the more his wings will be stronger. How can you not understand this?"

"Well... Isn't it too early to let him out now?" Yue Changtian was worried. "Inside our sect, even Wu Huitian wanted to kill

Chongxiao... but he had to figure out a way to kill him in here... If Chongxiao goes out..."

"You are worrying too much." Lei Dadi was indifferent. He said, "First of all, they will believe Chongxiao is dead. They will be relieved that their biggest problem is gone. Second, they should be worrying about our revenge more. Besides, Jun Yinglian is still out there waiting for a chance to take her revenge. Third, if we give Chongxiao a new identity, who would recognize him? Fourth, if Jun Yinglian comes to us, Chongxiao will be in great danger in the sect..."

"One more thing. The most important one..." Yun Piaoliu blandly said, "Usually, a genius like him should have experienced lots of wonderful adventures... All those super powerful figures in the history have brilliant stories about their young age. If we keep Chongxiao inside the sect, that will take away his opportunities to experience what he should have been through out there."

Yue Changtian nodded to agree. He said, "Master, you are right. When I was still traveling outside the sect, I did experience lots of interesting adventures. I used to have countless friends out there..."

The three old men were totally speechless.

[You are so shamelessly good at boasting... You? Countless friends? Lots of interesting adventures? I don't believe that's true...]

"It is such a great fortune that Chongxiao survives, but the strange and mysterious way he came back from death... What is that?" In fact, that was what Yue Changtian cared the most. "Master, if we can find out the power behind that... Maybe our sect..."

Lei Dadi looked at Yue Changtian as if he was looking at a fool. He disdainfully spoke in a weird tone, "Yue Changtian, are you out of your mind? I truly don't understand why the former Prime

master chose you. Look at you, coward, weak, and stupid. I truly didn't know you are actually so shortsighted!"

Yue Changtian giggled.

"There must be a reason why that mysterious thing happened on Ye Chongxiao." Feng Wuying humphed and said, "It only belongs to Ye Chongxiao himself. No one else could have it. If anybody dared to demand it, it will lead to misfortune."

"In fact, even Chongxiao himself may not know what just happened to him."

"At the very least, even if he does know what that is about, that force and that power... those must be something beyond the limits of this world, Qing-Yun Realm. Even though we figure out what it is, we are never able to use it. Why should we bother trying to dig it then?"

"Actually, even though we can duplicate the process, we can't keep it a secret... As long as the public know we are able to do that, we will be everybody's enemy. I am sure that if we successfully master this magical skill, we won't become stronger, instead, we will be destroyed sooner. None of our men will survive!"

Lei Dadi made a long sigh. "Cold Moon Palace is indeed one of the seven great sects, however... The one person, two great halls, three great palaces are all still existing... We can't mess with any of them... If they know we have that marvelous power, tell me... will we be able to survive those people?"

Chapter 880: A Tale

"Prime Master, do you know how many people in Cold Moon Palace are in fact spies from other great sects? How many of our secret events are really secrets to the other sects?" Yun Piaoliu looked at Yue Changtian.

"Cold Moon Palace is truly blessed to have Chongxiao as our disciple! From now on, whoever wants to hurt Ye Chongxiao, our great disciple, will be our biggest enemy! I don't care who he is. We won't let him go! Even Wu Fa!"

Lei Dadi was talking loudly and seriously!

Yue Changtian had prepared a lot to persuade the three old men, but now he knew that he actually didn't need to. In the end, he just agreed to the three old men.

They even dared to fight against Wu Fa for Ye Chongxiao. That must be a top-level determination. If Yue Changtian didn't agree today, he was afraid the three old men would even wipe the floor with him right away...

At the moment, Ye Xiao, who was still lying on the floor, made a sound and then opened his eyes. He murmured, "I never knew I am actually so blessed by the heavens... I actually survived..."

The four men were shocked.

[He can feel it?]

"Chongxiao, my boy, how do you feel? Do you feel anything wrong?" Lei Dadi walked over and checked on him.

"I feel fine. I guess I am alright now." Ye Xiao shook his head and sat up. He lowered his head and looked at the pink scar on his chest. He was lost in thoughts, without saying anything.

"My disciple... What is wrong?" Yun Piaoliu couldn't hold it anymore.

"Ah... It's hard to say. Heaven's will is always unpredictable." Ye Xiao thought about how overwhelming Meng Huaqing was in the old days. Her power was completely beyond his recognition. He sighed and said, "When I was in the Land of Han-Yang... Because my fiancée is such a talented cultivator who has Natural Phoenix Body and also Spiritual Body... a superior master cultivator from Human Realm Upon Heavens noticed her and recruited her."

"Me and my girl, we had a deep affection for each other. We didn't want to be parted. However, that master has saved the both of us, as well as my girl's father too. She wanted my fiancée to go with her. How can I say no to that? It was such a great fortune for my girl. I don't want her to miss that opportunity. I encouraged her to go, and I told her when she achieves greatness someday, we will meet again!"

"When that master left with my fiancée, she gave me a dan bead and told me it could save me eight times from death... It is called Nine Creating Dan..." He kept talking, "I guess that dan bead just worked on me..."

"Natural Phoenix Body... Spiritual Body... Nine Creating Dan..."

The four men all breathed in a cold breath.

They didn't know what those names meant, but they knew they were all superior stuff.

They knew Ye Chongxiao has a Natural Exquisite Body, yet that master cultivator didn't want him at all. That meant she must be too powerful for them to understand!

Ye Xiao chose to tell them the truth. What he told them was all true. It was rare that Ye Xiao just told the truth in a conversation since he was reborn... Maybe he hoped that somebody in Cold Moon Palace knew anything about what he said and could offer him some advice... However, nobody knew more than he did.

Yue Changtian and the three old men were some influential

figures in the world, yet they didn't know about Human Realm Upon Heavens.

He got nothing.

He was a bit lost and disappointed.

He thought that since Meng Huaqing was a superior figure in the upper realm, people in Cold Moon Palace, such an ancient sect, should know something about her... He had imagined that maybe somebody ascended to Human Realm Upon Heavens and frequently came back to tell others what he saw up there...

He used to be a solitary cultivator in the previous life, so it was reasonable that he knew nothing. However, Cold Moon Palace was a great sect. People in a great sect should have known something about the upper world.

Well, it turned out they didn't.

Maybe Meng Huaqing was too powerful to be known by people in the lower realm!

All in all, nobody knew anything about her.

They even knew less than Ye Xiao...

Yue Changtian and the three old men were lost in thoughts of Human Realm Upon Heavens, Natural Phoenix Body, Nine Creating Dan... Eight times immortal... They were still in shock.

[That it is.]

[We keep calling it the upper realm.]

[Some people call it God's Realm... It turns out to be Human Realm Upon Heavens...]

[What a splendid name...]

[It is such a good name for a mythic world... Ah...]

"Your fiancée... was recruited by a super figure in Human Realm Upon Heavens..." Yue Changtian suddenly felt that Ye Chongxiao

was such a great man...

He actually had a wife who was a god!

At least she was going to be a god?

[That is awesome...]

"Chongxiao, do you know what kind of position that great figure has in the upper realm?" Yue Changtian was excited. For people in Qing-Yun Realm, Human Realm Upon Heavens was a magical world that only exists in the myth.

They dreamed about ascending, but nobody ever succeeded. It was times more difficult than ascending from Land of Han-Yang to Qing-Yun Realm. There were people in history who ascended to the upper world from the Land of Han-Yang, but none ascended from Qing-Yun Realm!

"I don't know." Ye Xiao shook his head.

Ye Xiao knew several people in Human Realm Upon Heavens. Master Bai, Wan and Xiu, Ling Wuxie... People in Cold Moon Palace completely knew nothing about Human Realm Upon Heavens. It wouldn't benefit anyone else even if he were to tell them everything, so Ye Xiao stopped right there.

The three old men were murmuring, "Human Realm Upon Heavens... Human Realm Upon Heavens..."

Their eyes were blurred. They seemed lost in thoughts.

"Wait. What is this place? Why am I here?" Ye Xiao was awake, back from death, so he started to become more aware of this strange hall.

The hall didn't help him with anything when he was recovering. However, it was benefiting him at the moment. He felt cooled down and spirited while staying inside this hall.

"Sky Soul Hall." Yue Changtian was still in shock, so he casually answered.

"Sky Soul Hall!" Ye Xiao's eyes lit up.

At the moment, Ye Xiao remembered those that he had seen before... Souls!

...

Chapter 881: Sky Soul Hall!

"This place... gives me a weird feeling!" Ye Xiao showed curiosity. "It's like... It seems I am improving fast in this place. My soul... I can feel it spirited. Is it my illusion because I am just recovered from fatal damage..."

"No. Your feeling is right." Yue Changtian said, "This is the most important place of our sect!"

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao said, "I see. This place is marvelous. I guess it took quite much to build this place back in the old days..."

What he said exposed his purpose.

He wanted to know about this place!

However, he was now the most important figure in Cold Moon Palace. He was the hope of the sect's future. Besides, he was just back from death... and that shocked the four men...

Also, the story of Human Realm Upon Heavens was even more shocking...

They didn't hesitate. They wouldn't suspect Ye Chongxiao of any hostility...

They wouldn't hide any secret from him!

Yue Changtian sighed and said, "True. It took quite a lot... In fact, it takes way too much to finish... What a shame... I guess Sky Soul Hall will be destroyed from now on..."

Ye Xiao was surprised. "What? Why? Such a great place. Why will it be destroyed? Did it consume too much energy to save me just now?"

Yue Changtian wanted to say something but ended just making a deep sigh.

Lei Dadi seemed hopeless. He sighed and said, "You know nothing, kid. You are alive because of your own fortune. Sky Soul Hall didn't really save you... The reason why this place will be destroyed... This place is built by the three factions together. It is our top secret... We decided to quit the three factions. I guess nobody will follow the rules anymore... Ah."

Before he finished, Yue Changtian made a long sigh.

Ye Xiao's heart was beating fast. He felt that he might finally catch a clue... about something that he didn't understand and also something he hated the most in his previous life!

Lei Dadi wanted to stop the topic by showing a helpless expression. Ye Xiao wouldn't let it stop!

He asked with curiosity, "Top secret? Well... Is it a story behind this building?"

"Story..." Lei Dadi looked painful. He sighed deeply and said, "It is not just a story... It is a... moaning epic... of billions of blood and tears..."

"Millions of heroes... perished in this story."

Lei Dadi shook his head. "Among the millions, there were many level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators. The most sensational event in the story is about that man, who has made the biggest loss to this project... Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao!"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[I was right!]

[Sky Soul Palace!]

[The three factions did countless unforgivable crimes in earlier years for this Sky Soul Hall!]

"I guess this Sky Soul Hall is quite important for the sects?" Ye Xiao showed curiosity.

"Sure it is." Lei Dadi nodded. "I forgot you are new to this world.

You don't know the resounding name of Xiao Monarch..."

Ye Xiao nodded and asked, "Hmm... Who is that Xiao Monarch? Which sect is he from? Why is he so powerful?"

Lei Dadi held his forehead. It seemed he was having a headache.

Apparently, the old man realized Ye Chongxiao was dragging the topic away further and further. He knew it would take a whole day to explain everything to him...

However, Ye Chongxiao was his beloved disciple. What he was asking were things that he needed to know before he got out to the martial world. Lei Dadi had to explain it. He then decided to tell Ye Chongxiao everything. [I have a much longer life now. I have more time to spend on you. Maybe if I tell you more today, the better you will live out there in the martial world...]

"It is a long story." Lei Dadi said, "Let me explain it to you..."

Yue Changtian said, "Master, I guess I should better be off and let you teach Chongxiao. The disciples outside haven't seen me for a long time. They must be worried. I should go out and make some arrangements on fighting against the two factions. Besides, I need to tell everybody Chongxiao is dead. We need to get it done quickly."

Lei Dadi humphed. He said, "Of course there are lots of things you should do out there. Wu Huitian killed lots of our people in our place. You must give everybody a fair explanation. If you can't comfort them, somebody may start to have a fractured loyalty to the sect. A sect that gives disciples no safety will never get loyalty from people! Hmm... You said it earlier today, that Cold Moon Palace is no longer one of the three factions... What is the future of Cold Moon Palace then... How do we show ourselves to the martial world... How do we act in the world... We must have a goal. You have to deal with all these matters as soon as possible."

"One more thing. You must call every one of the ten great elders

back right now. Make sure you do this first." Yun Piaoliu said, "As an arrow is shot out, it can't go back. Cold Moon Palace must rise up. It depends on you now, Prime Master."

Yue Changtian suddenly felt the heavy burden on his shoulders. He looked solemn and left the hall.

After that, he called for the elders outside the door.

Apparently, he was arranging a meeting.

The three old men sighed. They looked at Ye Xiao and still felt a bit scared.

The two factions were obviously concentrated in getting Ye Chongxiao killed. They even considered him a more dangerous enemy than Jun Yinglian. It was lucky that he had that Nine Creating Dan... Otherwise, he would definitely have been killed...

If he died, even though the three old men's lives were extended, they wouldn't want to live anymore.

As long as Lei Dadi thought of how their beloved disciple was assassinated inside their own place, he would turn furious.

He had cursed for a long time before he realized he had to explain everything about Sky Soul Hall to Ye Chongxiao.

"Sky Soul Hall is the biggest secret of the three factions. It is passed to us generation to generation from the ancient time. To activate the Sky Soul Hall... first condition, each faction should have over two hundred thousand disciples. Only with that many people's will together, the Sky Soul Hall could be activated!

"The three factions had been through so many years. About three thousand years ago, we started to be one of the top powerful forces in Qing-Yun Realm. After that, we had more and more talented disciples and we started to recruit more and more disciples. About three hundred years ago, Cold Moon Palace finally reached two hundred disciples. The three factions celebrated it together.

"Three factions always worked together. Sun, Moon, Star. Three different lights shined together to activate the Sky Soul Hall. Then we realized the true power of the hall. It was the most valuable thing the ancestors left to us. However, it requires a billion human souls to cooperate with the three lights, so as to call the soul of the great ancestor back from death. After that, the three factions will be invincible in the world and rule the world forever!

"First of all, the great ancestor returns from death in the Sky Soul Hall to teach us his mighty wisdom. Second, the force of Sky Soul Hall gathers the willpower of people in the world. Third, it assembles the power of souls. As long as the hall is fully built, it can assemble the power of souls and make it into a soul plate. Every level nine Dao Origin Stage disciple will devote a little part of their soul power to be made into a soul plate. All soul plates will be stored in the Sky Soul Hall.

"When a disciple dies outside, his soul plate will break into pieces and set free of his soul power. The soul power will form into a spirit because of the power of Sky Soul Hall. That spirit will have reincarnation. He will keep the memory of the previous life and he will be thousand times faster than others in martial art cultivation. This is a much better way to improve oneself than snatching other's body..."

"The soul plate gives the disciple the chance to be born again! Besides, if a disciple reaches the limitation of his present life, he can perish himself. After that, the soul plate will give him a second chance to live again. It will take him no longer than a hundred years to become as powerful as he used to be. Sky Soul Hall is truly a masterpiece of the universe!"

Ye Xiao was frightened.

He finally got to know the real purpose of the three factions.

...

Chapter 882: Fierce Blade

If a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator was reborn with his memory intact once again started to cultivate from the beginning...

That was even more horrible than Ye Xiao!

After some time, the world would belong to the three factions! Nobody was able to defeat them!

Maybe they would forever rule the Qing-Yun Realm!

"Is it true? The cultivator can be reborn with his memory?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Life and death, nature's law. Of course, nobody can hold the full memory to the next life!" Lei Dadi stared at him and said, "It will be a force hidden deep in his soul that would keep leading him back to the sect he was from in the previous life... However, he would definitely be much faster in cultivation. The spirit won't directly pass the full memory to the cultivator in the next life, but it still gives him the basic reactions!"

"You said it won't directly pass the memory to the next life, then there must be some special method to activate the memory?" Ye Xiao asked.

Feng Wuying thought for a while and said, "It is possible to get the memory from the previous life, but we don't think it is worth doing. To get the memory from the previous life, first, the three lights must be bonded as one to unclothe the seal that was made by the reincarnation power. That would consume countless soul power. It is not easy. Besides, the cultivator who gets the memory back should be over level eight of Dao Origin Stage, so that he can be strong enough to endure the strike from the power. After that, he can get his memory back. These two are both extremely difficult things to do.

"In fact, it may not always be a good thing to get the memory back. After all, memories of two lives staying in one head... Should he choose to maintain the present him or the previous him? If he can't perfectly merge the two lives as one, he will be mad. A man shares two lives. Over a hundred years ago, there was a genius in Saint Sunlight Sect. He took the reincarnation. Fifty years after, he became level eight of Dao Origin Stage. Saint Sunlight Sect helped him activate his previous memory. It went well. He got the memory back successfully. However, he became a freak since then. Sometimes, he was one man, sometimes, he was another. The two personalities kept disturbing each other. He couldn't get any improvement after that. That is why those who have reincarnated barely want to have their previous memories back!"

Ye Xiao took a breath of relief and said, "I see."

Sky Soul Hall really had an amazing power on reincarnation, however, it was totally not the same story as what happened to Ye Xiao. They were two similar reincarnation ways, but totally different in results!

"To finish the structure of Sky Soul Hall, the three factions have been invading other's places in the recent three hundred years. We have been doing it secretly. We have done many evil things. The three factions fight together, and nobody in the world can really stop us. It was going well those years.

"However, things won't just be good on our side. A few years earlier, when we were invading Sky Soul Mountain to snatch the soul power, unexpectedly, we encountered a super cultivator, the Fierce Blade, Li Wuliang! That was the beginning of many incidences afterwards!"

Lei Dadi slowly spoke. He seemed to be in grief.

Ye Xiao slowly closed his eyes.

[Fierce Blade, Li Wuliang!]

[Finally, it's about you now, brother.]

"We didn't know Li Wuliang was hiding in that mountain for secret cultivation. He saw the three factions invading the mountain. He definitely didn't allow it. The three factions didn't want to offend such an influential figure at the beginning. We promised him ten thousand square kilometers land as long as he gave up the Sky Soul Mountain. It was a good deal for him. We were showing our concession.

"Fierce Blade just laughed. He said, 'I would rather die protecting this mountain than live as a degrading animal!'

"That was the end of the negotiation. What we could do was to start a fight. He was alone. He defeated all the Dao Origin Stage cultivators from the three factions that day. He did show mercy to us. He didn't kill anybody, just forced us to leave. He who has a bigger fist has the power. Li Wuliang won the fight. Three factions admitted defeated!"

Ye Xiao said, "The three factions were determined to get the mountain. You wouldn't give it up. However, strength was the first law in this world. Li Wuliang was good, but if he faced the real powerful cultivator of the sects, he would be defeated for sure. It shouldn't be difficult. However, you talked as if things weren't that simple?"

"No, it wasn't simple at all. As you said, the three factions wouldn't give up on the mountain. Even though we were defeated and spared by the man, we still returned to the mountain the other day. We thought we would definitely get Li Wuliang down as we had sent many powerful men. In fact, if we just defeated him and offered him some profits, things would end up in peace. However, because of one filthy bastard and his stupid decision, things went to an unmanageable situation..." Feng Wuying sighed.

"A bastard and his decision? What was that?" Ye Xiao asked.

"The second time, the three factions had a much more powerful

force. We should have won that fight easily. However, to defeat Li Wuliang would still cause a certain damage to us. A bastard from Saint Starlight Sect sneaked up to the mountain and kidnapped Li Wuliang's sworn brother, as well as his brother's wife and son, so as to force Li Wuliang to submit. That day... Gosh..." Feng Wuying sighed and couldn't continue.

Yun Piaoliu rejoined, "It is filthy as it is. We can't escape it! That day, Li Wuliang was ready to submit in order to keep his brother's family safe. However, that bastard was so insatiable. He threatened to kill the three innocent people and forced Li Wuliang to waste his own martial art. Li Wuliang's sworn brother was such a tough man. He sacrificed himself to kill that bastard. However, he was weak. That bastard was hurt but didn't die. That bastard was humiliated so he killed the woman and the kid immediately...

"That certainly pissed Li Wuliang so much. He, with his sword, killed one hundred and seventy Dao Origin Stage cultivators of the three factions who were there that day. He even chased the rest of the three factions' men over three thousand miles till he killed them all, one by one! That bastard was cut countless times on the body by Li Wuliang's rapid sword cuts then eventually died!

"That fight had shocked the entire Qing-Yun Realm!"

...

Chapter 883: The Past!

"After that, the three factions finally realized how powerful Li Wuliang was!

"So many disciples died in that fight. The three factions were full of meanings. There was no room for negotiation anymore. The sects sent many top cultivators to kill Li Wuliang in Sky Soul Mountain.

"That day, the third time, Li Wuliang knew he might die fighting the three factions. He had sent a letter to his best friend, Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao, to ask for help.

"Fierce Blade slaughtered countless enemies; Xiao Monarch laughed at all heroes. They were both great heroes in the latest history. If the two of them fought together, the three factions might lose. Even if they could win, it would cost them way more than they could afford. Besides, if Xiao Monarch came to the fight, his girlfriend, Jun Yinliang of Sky Ice Palace would definitely follow!

"If the three rising stars in Qing-Yun Realm fought together, that would be a huge power. If that happened, that would become the beginning of a great war in Qing-Yun Realm! Even if the three faction won the war, Sky Soul Hall would lose its use after that. Most of the elites in the three factions would die fighting the three heroic figures. Sky Soul Hall would be useless when there were no powerful disciples anymore!

"Luckily... Gosh... Maybe it wasn't good luck at all... Xiao Monarch had gone to Boundless Saint Domain. Even though he was at the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage, it would take him a long time to return to the realm.

"The three factions had sent 99 level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators three times in total. Fierce Blade had been fighting for three full days until he was seriously injured by the Three Lights

Strike and fell down the cliff of the Sky Soul Mountain!

"He was utterly exhausted by then. The Three Lights Strike definitely killed both his physical body and soul.

"At last, the three factions occupied Sky Soul Mountain and abstracted the soul power. However, it wasn't the end of the battle. Xiao Monarch was back from the Boundless Saint Domain for his brother.

"He heard the death of Fierce Blade, so he started a big fight against the three factions without hesitation!

"After Xiao Monarch declared war against the three factions, the three factions realized they had actually occupied Xiao Monarch's master's hometown, Million Soul Mountain, before they went for Sky Soul Mountain... Saint Sunlight Sect killed all the people around Million Soul Mountain because it would be easier to occupy the mountain...

"Xiao Monarch knew what happened on both of the mountains, so he turned crazy. He kept fighting the three factions since he was back from the Boundless Saint Domain. He killed all the way along up to the Sky Soul Mountain. He killed every single disciple on the mountain and went to Million Soul Mountain. All disciple from Saint Sunlight Sect who were guarding there were slaughtered!

"After that, he killed people of the three factions everywhere he went. People of the three factions would be killed immediately if they met Xiao Monarch.

"The three factions decided to hunt Xiao Monarch. They sent out seven hundred of their best disciples to fight that crazy Xiao Monarch in the realm. It lasted seven months!

"That was a long-term battle. 327 top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators died in Ye Xiao's hand. Our sect has sent 219 disciples, only... 105 made it back!

"27 of the survivors completely lost their martial arts. They

wouldn't regain the strength ever in their lives. Over a dozen got seriously damaged. They have no chance to improve anymore. Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian, our twin wings, suffered great loss in that battle. Zhan Yunfei's soul beast was wasted. Zhu Jiutian's soul beast, Triple Feet Eagle, was killed. Zhu Jiutian couldn't recover after that setback, so he stopped improving anymore. Zhan Yunfei was seriously wounded. He is still unrecovered now... He only has eighty percent of his real power...

"That was such a tough battle. The three factions were greatly damaged. We were at least weakened forty percent... That was the biggest loss in the history of the three factions!"

Yun Piaoliu sighed.

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while and said, "Forgive me, masters. In my opinion, that is completely the three factions' fault. If the three factions didn't do those evil things, none among Fierce Blade and Xiao Monarch would fight against the three factions. Fierce Blade has already spared the lives of the three factions' disciples. If the three factions didn't do such unacceptable things, things wouldn't end miserably like that."

"That's true." Lei Dadi looked gloomy. "Three factions only have themselves to blame. However, the Sky Soul Hall concerns the future of the three sects... We had to do it."

"Actually, if Li Wuliang gave up on the mountain at the beginning, none of those tragedies would happen. We were wrong, but he wasn't completely right..." Yun Piaoliu said.

"Master, you are wrong about that." Ye Xiao blandly said, "Li Wuliang was honored as the Blade of the Realm. He had his dignity and honor. No matter what compensation the three factions gave him, he was still kicked out from that mountain!"

"He would look like being expelled from his place, like a useless animal!"

"No honorable men could endure such disgrace."

"I am weak in martial art cultivation, but I know a cultivator should keep a spirited heart. If a cultivator loses dignity, he won't be able to improve any further." Ye Xiao slowly spoke, "If Li Wuliang left that mountain because he was afraid of the three factions, that would be a great disgrace. Even if he is still alive, the feeling of shame and failure will haunt him forever. He would never give up on the mountain so easily. I guess if you were him, you wouldn't do that either."

"That's right." Lei Dadi looked old and sad. "It's true. That... since the three factions decided to take Sky Soul Mountain... that fight became unavoidable!"

"There might be a way to avoid that rough fight though. When the three factions went for the mountain the second time, if the three factions fought against Li Wuliang face to face and defeated him, it wouldn't lead to any other regrettable events. In Qing-Yun Realm, who has stronger power makes the call! It wouldn't be honorable, but it was definitely reasonable," Ye Xiao said.

The three old men were lost in silence. Ye Xiao was right. Fierce Blade didn't kill those men of the three factions after he won the fight. He had shown his respect to the three factions. The second time when the three factions went up to the mountain, they violated the rule of the martial world. That bastard of Saint Starlight Sect had thoroughly violated the rule. He was lunatic and unscrupulous. The three old men were righteous men. They didn't want to say things against their conscience, so they stayed silent!

...

Chapter 884: Separate Ways!

"All in all, it was that bastard who caused all that mess. He made Li Wuliang turn totally hostile to the three factions. After that, the three factions focused on Fierce Blade and eventually got him killed. It also led to Xiao Monarch's death. Sky Ice Palace, Jun Yinglian, is on her way for revenge now.

"The three factions lost thousands of men fighting against Fierce Blade. There were many Dao Origin Stage disciples among them. They were almost ten percent of the three factions' most powerful force. That fight against Xiao Monarch cost thirty percent of our elites.

"The three factions are no longer the three factions four years ago..." Feng Wuying made a long sigh. "Jun Yinglian is coming with the grudge she has held in her heart for one year... I am afraid it will become another disaster.

"It is predictable... that after the fight against Jun Yinglian, the three factions will fall into the dust..."

Yun Piaoliu sighed. "Xuan Bing's toughness showed many problems on us. If the three factions become a bit weaker, we will be suppressed by the other four great sects, two great halls, and three great palaces. We may lose the qualification to be one of the great sects after that.

"It will be much more difficult to rise again."

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a long time. He didn't say a word after that.

He looked so calm.

However, deep in his heart, there were terrifying waves.

[Fierce Blade, Li Wuliang!]

[Brother!]

[Finally, I get to know the truth of what happened!]

"Master, now that we are parted from the three factions, will we stop the Sky Soul Hall?" Ye Xiao blandly asked. He sounded distant.

"We never want to give it up." Lei Dadi shook his head. "It is the greatest prospect of the three factions. It can't be stopped!"

"We are out of the three factions, but Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect would never stop it!" Yun Piaoliu sighed. "But... Sky Soul Hall in Cold Moon Palace... will have to be wasted."

"We can't activate the power of Sky Soul Hall with only the power of the moon. It has to be the power of three lights," Lei Dadi said.

"Hmm? Wait. We can't use the power of three lights, but neither Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect can make it! They don't have the power of the moon!" Ye Xiao found the problem.

"That's true..." The three old men were shocked.

That was right. Not only Cold Moon Palace, but also the other two sects couldn't keep building the Sky Soul Hall.

The power of sun, star, and moon made the power of three lights!

At this moment, Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He was enlightened. He blandly spoke, "I guess... It depends on whether Prime Master truly wants to leave the three factions or not..."

Lei Dadi said, "Chongxiao, what do you mean by that?"

Feng Wuying and Yun Piaoliu both looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao slowly spoke, in a solemn and clear tone, "I mean what I said. Wu Huitian was clearly targeting me this time. I have told the disciple brothers I didn't want to go see the greeting event, however, they still forced me to go.

"Men are always curious. I understand why they wanted to go. Why do they have to take me? If one of them insisted, it is

reasonable. However, many of them together forced me to go. That must be something strange, don't you think?

"It is quite obvious... They were spies!"

"Wu Huitian knew clearly where we were when he and his men started the attack. It must be because of the spies. However, the spies didn't know Wu Huitian would choose to kill them too. He perfectly covered the evidence..."

"In fact, I am sure there are still spies like them in our sect. There may be a lot of them." Ye Xiao said, "Some of them are in a rather high position in the sect. After all, when the gate is closed, it is impossible for Dream Origin Stage disciples to send messages out."

"There are high-level spies inside our sect."

Yun Piaoliu was enlightened. He looked pale immediately.

"That's true. Wu Huitian and Yun Xiran came together this time. They planned this together. However, Saint Sunlight Sect wouldn't tell Yun Xiran about their spy systems. The two sects wouldn't work on that together. In other words, there are spies in our sect, some from Saint Sunlight Sect, while the others from Saint Starlight Sect. There are lots of spies."

The three old men knew exactly what Ye Xiao wanted to tell them.

"I believe the spies in our sect must know lots of our martial arts. The power of moon may not be a secret to these men anymore.

"If Cold Moon Palace truly leave the three factions, the other two sects just need to call these spies back to continue the Sky Soul Halls in their sects! They won't stop it just because we won't support them anymore.

"In fact, they wouldn't just let the spies control the power of moon for them forever. I guess... They must have arranged their own disciples to cultivate our martial arts. The martial arts of the three sects are different, but they are from the same ancestors. As

long as they spend enough time on it, they can eventually master the Cold Moon Art..."

The three old men thought of it and started to look heavy-laden.

They had never thought that the brother sects had arranged so many spies in the sect for a long time and even tried to steal their martial arts.

"We need to wait for the return of the Prime Master and discuss it."

It concerned the future of Cold Moon Palace. The three old men were scarily solemn at the moment.

Ye Xiao nodded and stopped saying anything.

Lei Dadi looked around at the misty fog and said with a sigh, "We have worked so hard for many generations. Unexpectedly, the Sky Soul Hall, the dream of the three factions, will be ended by betrayal."

...

Chapter 885: Break the Deadlock

Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "In fact, it may be a better thing for the sect to end it now. Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect have been acting in filthy collusion for a long time. They want to destroy our sect. I guess even if the Sky Soul Hall is finished someday... they wouldn't allow us to have one for our own."

"In fact, there may eventually be just one Sky Soul Hall in the stronger one of them." Ye Xiao coldly said, "Brother sects are just a joke."

"If they truly are brother sects, why would they so desperately kill the great genius of our sect..."

"Cold Moon Palace leaving the three factions meant we will not try to build the Sky Soul Hall. In fact, they may stop planning on destroying us. Instead, they will possibly start to focus on fighting each other. That's better for us!"

The three old men sighed. They looked dozens older than they were all of a sudden.

In the Boundless Space, Erhuo kept jumping up and down and calling Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao just ignored it. In the end, he even directly restrained Erhuo.

The Sky Soul Hall was full of soul power. Erhuo needed it.

Erhuo wanted to get out and absorb the power for a long time.

Ye Xiao kept restraining it in the Boundless Space.

Erhuo should be able to get out the Space freely, but Ye Xiao was the owner of the Space. He just used one thought to block the way out!

"Meow... The soul power here can make me improve at least

three times... Why do you stop me..." Erhuo kept shouting, "Meow, meow, meow, meow..."

"Meow your ass! Can't you spend some time thinking of something else instead of eating and absorbing?" Ye Xiao strictly scolded.

Cold Moon Palace had been treating him so well. Everybody wanted him to live. Every master wanted him to improve faster. Oh surely not everybody... there were spies in the sect.

Ye Xiao knew Sky Soul Hall might greatly benefit him. If he let Erhuo absorb all the soul power in it, it would greatly enhance Erhuo and make the Boundless Space even stronger.

However, he didn't do it. He just locked Erhuo in the Space and made sure it wouldn't go out to get the power.

A great man would do what he should do and put away those that he shouldn't.

Even if Sky Soul Hall was useless for Cold Moon Palace, even if Cold Moon Palace decided to waste it, Ye Xiao wouldn't take the power away.

He wasn't being stubborn. He just wanted to insist with his principle. A man should have a bottom line.

Cold Moon Palace had done him a great favor. He knew he should be grateful. On the other hand, if anybody ever did injustice to him, he would definitely retaliate.

What he should never do was repay kindness with enmity!

No matter what, no matter where, no matter when, this was the everlasting rule.

Cold Moon Palace had been so kind to Ye Xiao all these days. No matter what, he couldn't just take the power in Sky Soul Hall sneakily! He couldn't do it!

"Chongxiao, I will tell Changtian about what you just said. No

matter what the sect will do, it is none of your business now. You can't stay in the sect anymore."

Lei Dadi looked at Ye Xiao. "That sword attack gives the perfect evidence to your death. From now on, Ye Chongxiao is dead."

"This is the best protection you can have. It is better than anything else we can do to keep you alive." Lei Dadi looked at Ye Xiao. "That's why we stopped feeling angry after learning that you're still alive."

"Of course, there is still hatred in our hearts. We will get on Wu Huitian when there is a chance. No matter what, you are free now."

Ye Xiao understood.

If Wu Huitian successfully killed Ye Chongxiao, the three old men would definitely start a crazy fight for revenge. They would even sacrifice themselves to let Wu Huitian pay the price.

However, the truth was Ye Chongxiao was alive. Things were different.

Ye Chongxiao was attacked on the chest under the watch of everyone. He should surely be dead.

When people saw him, he was still alive and being carried away for treatment. However, everybody knew that nothing could save him from that severe wound! Nothing in Qing-Yun Realm at least!

Even Sky Soul Hall could do nothing to save him.

Sky Soul Hall could keep a cultivator's spirit and give him a second life, however, the cultivator had to be at a high cultivation level. In fact, he had to be over level nine of Dao Origin Stage.

Ye Chongxiao was only level two of Dream Origin Stage. Sky Soul Hall wouldn't work for him.

Everyone believed the great genius Ye Chongxiao would die!

That was why Wu Huitian decided to leave so soon.

However, Ye Chongxiao survived out of everybody's expectation.

In fact, because of this assassination, it became a great cover for his existence. That was, as Lei Dadi said, a perfect protection!

There was nothing better than death to keep one's safety.

Even when he showed up again in the martial world and was seen by somebody who knew Ye Chongxiao, they would just think he looked so familiar to the departed great genius!

They wouldn't believe he was Ye Chongxiao!

Wu Huitian never knew that he had almost killed someone he shouldn't have messed with. He didn't know how powerful this young man was. He didn't know who this young man really was. He didn't know what this young man would become in the future.

He had messed with a horrible man this time.

Because of this assassination, Ye Xiao started to hate Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect instead of the three factions!

Deeply!

"Master... you mean... I should leave Cold Moon Palace now? Should I go out and survive the martial world on my own?" Ye Xiao cautiously asked.

Since he came to Cold Moon Palace, he had been longing to go out.

He had no chance to leave though.

Cold Moon Palace cherished him as if he was a pearl on the hand... He was a baby to them...

After they were sure Ye Chongxiao was capable enough to survive in the martial world, they wouldn't let him leave.

It was full of dangers out in the martial world. They couldn't risk the future of their sect!

Ye Xiao had been troubled about how to leave this place.

However, lucky or unlucky, out of everybody's expectation, now he finally got the opportunity to leave!

...

Chapter 886: Housecleaning

Even in a sect that was considered the safest place, it wasn't absolutely safe. Instead, because he stayed in a great sect, he became a bigger and clearer target to the enemies!

"If you stay in the sect, someday people will know you are still alive. There are many people who can recognize your face after all. We are unable to sweep all the spies in a short time. I don't think we can keep you safe. Wu Huitian did this once, so he can certainly do it again. If he decides to do it again, it will be more dangerous and vicious than this one. Next time, he may try to smash you into ashes. Nine Creating Dan has brought you back from death this time. How lucky! I don't think it will keep doing this again and again!"

"For you, it is much more dangerous to stay in the sect. I think you should just go out to the martial world. That will be much safer."

Yun Piaoliu said, "We don't want to you leave so soon. That's for sure. However, we have no other choice under such circumstances."

"You are going to mainly train yourself out there this time. The most important thing is to keep yourself safe! You are level two of Dream Origin Stage now. As long as you don't mess with the great forces in the world, you will be safe." Lei Dadi taught him patiently and kindly. He wished he could just give Ye Xiao his full heart.

When Ye Xiao was lowering his head listening to the guidance, Yue Changtian was holding the sect's meeting.

The crowd was boiling.

For what Wu Huitian had done, people in Cold Moon Palace shared the same hatred and grudge. Everybody felt the crisis.

Saint Sunlight Sect would never allow Cold Moon Palace to rise.

Cold Moon Palace quitting the three factions was a reasonable decision to make. Rather than keep dealing with two allies who kept suppressing them, it was better that they fought for their own future.

However, everybody wanted to keep the Sky Soul Hall!

Cold Moon Palace had devoted too much for the Sky Soul Hall. Sky Soul Hall had brought them so many advantages too. It was a shame to just waste it. It was a good decision to leave the other two sects, but it was unnecessary to waste Sky Soul Hall at the same time. They wanted to figure out their own way to build Sky Soul Hall!

The other two sects stole their martial arts. In fact, they could also try to steal the martial arts of the other two sects. If the other two sects could build Sky Soul Hall without Cold Moon Palace, they could also build Sky Soul Hall without the other two sects!

Yue Changtian kept showing a dark face, but he didn't reject it. That was a tacit permission.

The news spread fast.

"Cold Moon Palace left three factions."

It burst the entire Cold Moon Palace.

All disciples were discussing it.

The leadership of Cold Moon Palace didn't do anything to stop them.

Two days after that meeting, disciples started to ask for leave. They made up all kinds of excuses to leave the sect. The leadership of the sect approved all of them. More than half of the disciples left the sect...

Ye Xiao had left the sect two days before any other disciples left.

He looked back to the mountain but only saw the fog covering the entire sect. He could feel the three old men standing on the

mountain waving their hands to him, their eyes full of hope.

He wanted to leave Cold Moon Palace for a long time, but now that he was finally going to leave, he felt heavy on his feet. His blood was boiling. He realized it wasn't that easy to just walk away.

He had a special feeling in the heart. Since he had lost his first master in the previous life, he hadn't had such a feeling!

[Are they really that important to me now?]

[I... I will come back someday!]

Ye Xiao made up his mind to leave. He walked faster and faster. When he walked to a forest, he suddenly disappeared.

The name Ye Chongxiao was dead in the world since then!

It was said that there once was a great genius in Cold Moon Palace. He had shocked the entire sect when he was alive. However, in an accident, he was killed by Wu Huitian, the Prime Master of Saint Sunlight Sect.

Cold Moon Palace quit the three factions because of that.

However, no matter how talented he was, how brilliant he was, how shocking he was, he was a dead man!

Great figures always died before they could do anything influential. There was always just a small part of them who could stand on top of the world. Most of them died earlier than they should. The genius in Cold Moon Palace was just unlucky!

However, the death of this great genius wasn't just a normal event. It led to many changes in the martial world afterwards...

It all started on the seventh day after the young man's death...

The martial world was in disturbance all of a sudden.

Those disciples who left Cold Moon Palace were all tracked.

There were people who kept tracking them.

These people were certainly the core forces of Cold Moon Palace.

They saw the disciples leave and get down the mountain. They followed them all the way along. Those who had things to do for real would return to the sect after the things were handled.

However, some of the disciples would try to hide their trace by disguising themselves, sneakily heading to the other two sects. Those who had been tracking these disciples would show up and kill the disciples immediately!

Spies would eventually get killed!

[Maybe you have given the other two sects our martial arts, but it is impossible to have you go to the other two sects alive!]

That was Cold Moon Palace's bottom line.

Within seven days, all the suspected disciples were killed. Some of them were killed with those who came from the other two sects to meet them!

When the news kept coming back to the Prime Master Yue Changtian, he kept sighing while standing on top of the mountain.

He looked pale and frustrated.

There were over six hundred disciples under level two of Dao Origin Stage and above Dream Origin Stage who lost their lives!

That meant there were at least six hundred spies in the sect!

What an astonishing number!

There must be more spies who still stayed in the sect! They just didn't stupidly expose themselves in this event!

...

Chapter 887: So Long!

Yue Changtian felt terrified when he thought of the number!

"Housecleaning!"

When Yue Changtian made the decision, he felt sad but also thrilled.

This was the only moment that this Prime Master felt he was in charge of the future of the entire great sect!

...

To travel the martial world.

What a dream for a young man. The world "martial world" would light up a young man's eyes.

Martial world was a place full of dreams.

In the eyes of those boys and girls, the martial world was full of legends and opportunities. It was full of heroes, beauties, swords, songs, softness and toughness, hatred and gratitudes!

There were so many stories about the martial world.

When a boy talked about traveling the martial world, he felt so proud and stylish...

However, when a young man was truly living a life in the martial world, it gave him a totally different feeling.

He might be excited on the first day. The second day he might be still thrilled. The third day, he might still be interested... But what about the forth and the fifth? No one could stay enthusiastic forever!

What was traveling the martial world?

People had different answers. Was it traveling in the rivers and mountains?

No!

That was just touring.

There were countless youngsters who felt thrilled and excited at the beginning when they started their martial world lives. After that, all they had was confusion.

Traveling the martial world was not just carrying a sword and walking in the world...

...

Ye Xiao was traveling the martial world.

He wasn't like other young men. He had a clear purpose.

Sky Soul Mountain.

He just got to know that his brother, his best friend, had fallen down the cliff of Sky Soul Mountain in the fight.

Ye Xiao thought that his brother didn't really die since nobody ever confirmed his death yet.

He was very likely dead though, after falling down that cliff. However, Ye Xiao wanted to check.

[What if he survived?]

[I was sentenced dead too, yet look where I am. I have a second life to start over again. What if there is also something marvelous that happened to my brother?]

[At the very least... even if he truly died down there, I have to find his body and make him a decent tomb.]

[I will drink in front of his tomb to tell him what is deep in my heart, whether he is alive or not!]

That was why he went to Sky Soul Mountain first.

He had been extremely cautious on the way to the mountain.

He was even more cautious than when he was escaping the hunt in the previous life.

Zhan Yunfei was annoyed about that. He was secretly following Ye Xiao.

He was one of the men in Cold Moon Palace who knew Ye Chongxiao was alive. There were five of them, the three old men, Yue Changtian and Zhan Yunfei. In order to keep the secret safe, he had to be the man who secretly followed and protected Ye Chongxiao.

He didn't refuse the responsibility. Instead, he was quite happy to do this.

Right after Ye Xiao left the sect, Zhan Yunfei followed immediately.

Certainly, Ye Chongxiao didn't know it.

Zhan Yunfei was feeling quite good about it at the beginning though. [Young man, go travel your martial world!]

[You have no idea. Others are risking their lives in the martial world, while you have a super powerful guard behind you...]

[You are totally different from the others.]

However, after one day, he was shocked.

After they went across a forest, he lost Ye Chongxiao.

He had done whatever he could to find the trace of Ye Chongxiao, but he just couldn't... He couldn't find anything...

[I am a great level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator!]

[He is level two of Dream Origin Stage. We are like god and human! There is such a big gap between our power levels! How could I lose him...]

[That...]

Zhan Yunfei felt extremely disgraced.

How could he lose him?

He didn't understand it. He couldn't think it through. [He just

casually walked ahead along the road, with a small package on his shoulder. He looked so casual and leisure...]

[He must be unguarded.]

[A one hundred percent rookie martial artist!]

In fact, after half a day, Ye Xiao seemed to be in an urgent situation. He held his pants and went into the forest.

Zhan Yunfei knew what Ye Chongxiao was going to do. He surely wouldn't go and see the young man pee.

But he had waited too long. He didn't see Ye Chongxiao come back. None of the birds in the forest fly out. Ye Chongxiao just disappeared in the woods.

He had been waiting and waiting, but nothing happened. After about an hour, he couldn't endure it anymore. He sneaked into the wood.

He saw the trace of the dried urine on the foot of a big tree.

Apparently, it was Ye Chongxiao's. He must have left earlier because the urine has dried up!

There were some other obvious traces too. The big tree was ripped, revealing the white trunk below the rind. It was like a tombstone, looking garish in the dark of the forest. At least much more garish than the urine.

In fact, the most garish thing was the words on the tree, written with the blood of the rats. There were some dead rats on the floor, too.

'Disciple Brother Zhao, thanks for your hard work. But it is enough to escort me this far. I guess I should go on my own way by myself. I don't think I need a guard in the martial world, especially a super guard. So long, brother.'

Zhan Yunfei nearly passed out when he read the words.

He was pissed!

[He knew the sect would send people to protect him! He actually knew it was me.]

[Most importantly, he knew I was after him. He actually got rid of me!]

Zhan Yunfei was furious. He operated his mind power and carefully scanned the area. He knew Ye Chongxiao would never be able to leave this area within one hour!

However, he got nothing, no matter how hard he tried.

There was no trace of Ye Chongxiao. Not even a trace of the grass being stepped on.

It felt like Ye Chongxiao left under the ground after he finished his business...

Underground?

...

Chapter 888: Poles Apart!

When Zhan Yunfei realized it, it was already four hours later. He rushed back to the big tree and uprooted the tree. There was indeed a big hole behind the tree.

In the hole, he saw a letter.

'In fact when you left, I was still hiding here. However, I guess the moment you realize I am here, it should be a long time later. You must have been searching other places for a long time. Give it up now. You are not going to catch up with me this time. Brother Zhan, for real, so long, brother!'

Zhan Yunfei was utterly pissed...

He once again started to search the entire area...

And again, he got nothing.

In the next half month, Zhan Yunfei had searched the area of 50 kilometers like crazy. And he still kept expanding the searching area...

However, Ye Chongxiao was completely traceless.

Even the soul mark he had put in Ye Chongxiao was gone. It didn't work at all.

It just disappeared like a miracle!

Completely!

Zhan Yunfei eventually gave up and returned to the sect. He was frustrated.

He knew he had to report this to the Prime Master. When Yue Changtian learned about it, he immediately told the three old grandmasters.

Lei Dadi, Feng Wuying, Yun Piaoliu and Yue Changtian stared at Zhan Yunfei with a weird expression. He looked so down. Nobody

talked.

After a long time, Lei Dadi couldn't hold it anymore. He started a long series of rebuke.

"Pig! What a pig! It would be humiliating a pig to call you a pig! You are even stupider than pigs!" Lei Dadi was furious. Even his whiskers were shaking.

"You are level eight Dao Origin Stage. What you did was to follow a level two Dream Origin Stage young man... yet you lost him... How shameless that you dared to come back? Why didn't you just kill yourself out there..."

Feng Wuying looked at Zhan Yunfei speechlessly. After a while, he also burst out and scolded, "You god damn fool! Who is your private master? Tell me! I will go burn an incense for him and tell him how unlucky he was to have you as his disciple! I truly am impressed! How can't I be impressed by your excellent capability?"

Zhan Yunfei was usually brave and bold, yet now he was quiet, showing a red face, which was like the butt of a monkey!

He was utterly blushing!

"Zhan Yunfei, why don't you change a name from now on. Don't waste a good name." Yun Piaoliu rolled up his eyes and said, "You don't deserve the word 'fei' [1]. Why not Zhan Yunzhu? [2] You must be more foolish than a pig, but I can't think of anything stupider than a pig now. Just let the pig bear the shame."

Yue Changtian wanted to help his disciple brother because he looked so piteous at the moment. However, after thinking about it, he sighed and said, "In fact, it isn't all Brother Zhan's fault... Nobody knew that he is actually more foolish than a pig..."

[Are you truly supporting me?]

Zhan Yunfei just wanted to hang himself at the moment.

"What? You have a problem with this? What are you staying here

for? Get the hell out of here and go search for Chongxiao now! Do you want to show off your stupid face?" Lei Dadi scolded, "What? Do you think you look good standing here like a pig with a sharp nose?"

Zhan Yunfei was bearing the humiliation. He walked out the hall and left the sect with regret in the heart.

[God damn it!]

[When I find Ye Chongxiao, I am going to rip off his skin!]

[I haven't been so disgraced before in my entire life! Even my master had never scolded me like that...]

"Yunfei, you can't make it alone. I guess you are not smart enough. How about this, I'll let Zhu Jiutian go with you." Yue Changtian said after Zhan Yunfei walked away.

It was close!

It was so close that Zhan Yunfei spat out blood and died.

Now he was on the way with Zhu Jiutian.

"Hahahahaha..." Zhu Jiutian had been laughing all day. He kept looking at Zhan Yunfei at the side of his eyes. "Tell me the details again. Did he actually play you around like that? He was behind the tree? You went to find him like, what, till you reach the end of the world? Hahahahaha... Prime Master was right. You are not smart enough. I can prove that..."

- Bang! -

Zhan Yunfei didn't say anything but just punched on Zhu Jiutian's nose. He fiercely said, "I can't do anything to Ye Chongxiao, Prime Master or the three old grandmasters... but I can definitely punch you to death! Listen, you are here to serve as a vent to my anger this time! Remember this!"

He looked so fierce on the face. That was horrible.

Zhu Jiutian got punched on the nose, but he didn't stop laughing.

He held his stomach and gasped. "Oh no, I can't... can't... Even if you are going to beat me to death, I have to laugh... Damn... This is going to light up the days in my afterlife... So hilarious... I never knew you would actually be disgraced like this ever... I haven't had anything to live for a long time. You just gave me something to brighten my life... So kind of you... You are a nice fool... Hmmm... I guess I shouldn't call you Zhan Yunfei anymore... They gave you a new name, right? What is it? Oh! Zhan Yunzhu! Good name! Brilliant! Smart!"

Zhan Yunfei nearly freaked out. "You bastard! Can you stop? Go on if you dare! Can you stop, please? Let's be frank, if we can't find him this time, I will not be the only one who is recognized as a fool. I am Zhan Yunzhu and you will be Zhu Jiuzhu. Think about it... Yours is worse... Can you stop gloating now?"

"You couldn't find him because you are stupid. I am smart. Of course I will find him!" Zhu Jiutian was so confident.

Zhan Yunfei looked at Zhu Jiutian like looking at a poor man. [You will regret this. I promise you will!]

[I promise!]

[Zhu Jiuzhu is going to be your name soon!]

...

When Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian left the sect, Ye Xiao was casually walking on the Discord Plains. It was merely five hundred miles away from Cold Moon Palace.

It wasn't that far. If Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian went to the right direction, maybe they could see him soon.

However, things were a bit out of their expectation.

Ye Xiao was moving towards the south.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were heading north. Of course they were. Ye Chongxiao was heading north too before he disappeared.

Thus, north and south, if they saw Ye Xiao, it must be a miracle again!

When Ye Xiao was five hundred miles away from Cold Moon Palace in the south, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian had gone at least four thousand miles in the north...

—————

[1] Fei, means fly.

[2] Zhu means pig.

Chapter 889: Martial World Is Good

'Everybody says the martial world is good, but where is it, please tell me if you could?'

'In the mountains, in the forests, in the waters, where to find the martial world that is good?'

'Youngsters say the martial world is good. How many of them are really mature?'

'It is said one can carry and strike a sword. How many know about the sin and blood buried in the sword?'

'Young men say the martial world is good. A hero always has a beautiful girl.'

'When he steps in the martial world, how does he know who's the witch and who's the girl?'

'Who's a lady and who's a whore?'

'People say the martial world is good, how much love and hatred do they know?'

'They heard the legends from young to old, who heard about the heroes and beauties buried in the wild?'

'On the side of the road in the martial world, lots of bones and tombs.'

'How many youngster's dreams were buried?'

'Martial world is good. Martial world is wonderful. Youngsters should leave before they are old.'

'Easy to get in, difficult to get out. Do you know how many people were showing their fake smiles while feeling extremely sad in it?'

'Only when you are old do you know how much better your family is than the stupid martial world dream.'

'You won't want to spend a life among swords and blood if you

know about it...'

'Martial world is good. Martial world is wonderful. Martial world is also evil.'

'Martial world is good for the man who has climbed to the peak alone.'

'Don't ever say the martial world is good.'

'You say it is good. I say it is good. We both wish we have left when we still could...'

...

There were mountains. Lots of continuous mountains

It was in the wild.

There was an old path.

In the sunset, Ye Xiao was riding a black pony with white hooves. He casually traveled on the path alone.

The breeze brushed past against his face. His blue robe was fluttering, his hair was floating, and he felt so comfortable as if he was leaving all the mortal chaos behind.

After he left Cold Moon Palace, completely got rid of Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian, he changed his clothes right away. He even changed his hairstyle to the one he used in the Land of Han-Yang. He was having fun traveling along the way to the south. In the end, he commanded Erhuo to get him a wild pony. He rode on the pony and casually walked on the road.

He was like a decent and beautiful young lord walking among the mountains and rivers!

That was so... f*cking enjoyable, casual... and enviable!

He forced himself to temporarily free his head, not to think about anything serious.

The grudge from the previous life, the gratitude in the present

life, the hatred from the past, and the love in the present time. He kept telling himself, 'hatred is hatred, gratitude is gratitude'. However, the reality had made a dead knot in his heart.

It wasn't that difficult to sort it out though. He just couldn't make up his mind to do it!

He was troubled and entangled. He decided to put away all that entangled him and enjoy the leisure time.

When he walked to the road near a forest and saw the lonely tombs on the roadside, he was touched. It reminded him of a song that had been sung in Qing-Yun Realm for decades, Martial World Is Good. He started to sing gently.

It was a song, well, not exactly a song. It only had a short single strain. It was a vagrant cultivator who sang it thoughtlessly. Ye Xiao still remembered that day when he met that vagrant cultivator. Now as he thought of it, it seemed happening before his eyes...

A ragged, white-haired, sad-faced, and travel-stained man, holding an Erhu [1], sang in a lonely rhythm.

He never knew this song he thoughtlessly played would be resounding in the world forever.

The martial world contained too many beautiful dreams of youngsters. Heroes, love stories, songs, beauties, courage, fame, legends... but all were buried in history...

A sword came and left, with hatred and gratitude...

A song killed and moaned, the rhythm of the sword art...

It was a dream

It could only be a dream.

A dream, especially a sweet dream, one was easy to wake up from! Reality was the only eternity!

Only those ignorant youngsters, in their most impulsive ages,

thought the martial world was wonderful. However, when they were old enough, they eventually saw the truth. There was no dream in the martial world. What they could do was to make a long sigh.

It was simply a world of sin, filth, blood, betrayal, slaughter, and death!

It aroused everybody's negative emotion, status, and feelings!

A man sometimes had no choice while living in the martial world. The tiredness and the helplessness would keep filling his heart.

Ye Xiao loved this song. It told the solitariness and helplessness of the life in the martial world.

Whenever he was free, he would sing it gently on the top of a mountain, or in a silent valley. The sadness, grief, the helplessness, and despair in the song were only experienced by cultivators who had been through a lot in the martial world.

Every time when he sang it, he had some strange feeling and got a new enlightenment. It was like a liquor to him, which contained both the spiciness of the new liquor and the richness of the old. The two tastes worked together in his heart, making a complex emotion. It could only be sensed but not described.

"The martial world is good for the man who has climbed to the peak alone..." Ye Xiao sighed. "However, even when one is on top of the world, the loneliness... Is it truly good? The man who wrote this song... I don't think he understands it thoroughly... Ah... One can only get the most distant view when he is in the highest position. He has never been on top of the world... so he surely have no idea how it feels to stand on top of the world..."

The pony was making clopping sound. Ye Xiao was moving on the road in a casual way. It fitted the image of a lonely hero in the youngsters' mind, though.

However, somebody laughed and then sang loudly, "Good. Martial world is good. Martial world is great. Men are beheaded every day. Martial world is good. Martial world is great. Heroes die in the same way. Martial world is good. Martial world is great. Beauties grow old and ugly day by day. Martial world is good. Martial world is great. Lives are wasted in different ways. Martial world is good. Martial world is great. Who the f*ck says the martial world is great? ..."

Ye Xiao was shocked. The man who sang sounded so energetic. In his voice, there was a sense of unruliness, unconstraint, and wildness. Apparently, he had something powerful to support him on being outspoken like this.

What the man sang wasn't the original song. However, it was the same rhythm. Apparently, he added the lyric into the original song. However, Ye Xiao felt like it sounded exactly the same as the vagrant cultivator's. However, it was more wild and unruly.

The man's voice was heavy and broad. Hearing the voice, Ye Xiao started to picture the image of the man.

It might be a man who was tall and overweight with a big beard.

"May I ask who sang the song that impressed me that much? Since we are both fans of it, why not just show yourself to me?" Ye Xiao looked at the forest and spoke loudly.

...

Chapter 890: Guan Lingxiao!

With a loud laughter, a big shadow showed up in the forest. A man showed himself.

He was exactly as Ye Xiao pictured.

The man was square-shouldered, tall and heavy. He was one head higher than the average. As he walked out the forest, it felt like a living iron tower moving out.

He walked in big strides. It seemed the earth was shaking when he stepped on it.

The man was bigger than normal people in every part of the body, arms, head, waist...

However, instead of being peculiar, he looked pretty good.

He just simply walked. He didn't try to gather any spiritual power or do any martial art. There was a strong vigor naturally glowing on him.

Ye Xiao was right about his big beard too. He had a big beard and an unkempt hair. However, he didn't look slovenly.

"Young man, you sang well!" The big man grinned and said, "You are so young, yet you sang the true beauty of that song. Well done."

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I am flattered. I just thoughtlessly learned and tried. What you sang, that was much more meaningful and cadenced. I guess you must have lots of experience about the life in the martial world, brother. It all came from the bottom of your heart. May I have your name, please?"

He didn't know the man. Since they liked the same song, he decided to make friends with the man.

"Me? I am Guan Lingxiao. Brother, you must have heard of me before!" The big man laughed. He seemed quite confident about his reputation.

"Guan Lingxiao?" Ye Xiao was a bit blank. He coughed and said, "Well... Uh... I am new to the martial world... I barely know much about heroes in this world... I am quite ignorant..."

He truly hadn't heard of such a name ever. But the man was showing a face saying 'I am a big figure! You definitely know my name! You must!' Ye Xiao didn't want to hurt his feeling.

However... he couldn't lie about it either. He wouldn't say something like 'what a reverberating name in the world'...

"You... Really? You haven't heard of me?" Guan Lingxiao looked at Ye Xiao like looking at a freak, which was ignorant and stupid.

"Not... Not really." Ye Xiao shook his head. He decided to just be frank!

In fact, although it was his second life now, he had just been away from Qing-Yun Realm for about two years. No matter how experienced he was, he was too much a superior figure in the realm. He only remembered those who were as brilliant as himself. In fact, there were just a few people in the realm that he would try to remember the names of.

Guan Lingxiao was a name he had never heard of. It wouldn't be an influential name at all.

He wanted to be patient and thoughtful for the man because they both liked the song and the man actually added some wonderful lyrics in the song. However, after being asked several times about whether or not he knew about the name, Ye Xiao felt a bit... well, not disgusted, but slightly annoyed!

Guan Lingxiao seemed disappointed. He widely opened his eyes and turned around. He rubbed his head and said with an unbelieving face, "Have you truly never heard of my name? Have you heard of Half Sky? Don't tell me you know nothing about Half Sky. You are new in the martial world, so you are a bit ignorant. I get it. But your masters should have told you stories about some

important figures in the world!"

Ye Xiao was speechless. He thought for a while and said, "I truly don't know your name at all. The Half Sky... I remembered it was the monicker of a cultivator who's name is Xiao Mengyun... Do I remember it wrong..."

Guan Lingxiao looked at Ye Xiao and spoke in an extremely sorrowful voice, "That man has died... for over thirty years... brother..."

Ye Xiao rubbed his head. It was a bad habit he developed in the present life. It was not good, but sometimes he couldn't help it.

Guan Lingxiao looked at Ye Xiao, hoping that he would think of his name. He seemed quite stricken.

Ye Xiao thought for a long time but just shrugged. He couldn't think of anything, so he looked at Guan Lingxiao regrettably.

Guan Lingxiao jumped up and shouted, "There actually is a man who hasn't heard of my name! Actually... You actually haven't..."

He talked like Ye Xiao didn't know the seven sects, one person, two great halls and three palaces...

Ye Xiao was speechless!

"Forget it. Just tell me who do you know in the world? Whose names have heard before? You must know some names!" Guan Lingxiao lowered his head while looking at Ye Xiao from high to low and talked to Ye Xiao in a frustrated tone.

Well, Ye Xiao was two heads smaller than him, no matter how he tried to stand higher!

The man was too tall. It wasn't Ye Xiao's fault!

"The names... Hmmm... I know about the man, Wu Fa... Xuan Bing of Misty Cloud Palace, the names of the prime masters of the two great halls. I know the prime masters of the seven great sects..." Ye Xiao looked innocent. He just said the people in the

world that he thought were influential enough.

That was a list of some true great figures. In Xiao Monarch's eyes, there were just about thirty people in the entire Qing-Yun Realm who were truly important, because every one of these people was extremely powerful, at least equally powerful with him. The rest of the cultivators were truly not qualified enough for him to bother remembering the names.

Guan Lingxiao opened his mouth and looked at Ye Xiao blankly. After a while, when Ye Xiao was done, Guan Lingxiao said, "What else? Who else do you know apart from these top ranged monster cultivators?"

Ye Xiao thought for a while and then said, "Well... as like... Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian of Cold Moon Palace... Gu Jinlong of Saint Sunlight Sect... And..."

The more Ye Xiao spoke, the darker Guan Lingxiao's face became. Those were all superior figures in the realm...

...

Chapter 891: What's Wrong With You?

Guan Lingxiao stopped him and said, "Can't you stop giving me the names of those horrible people? Who else do you know? Someone more ordinary? Someone not so frightening?"

Ye Xiao shrugged. "No..."

In fact, he knew a less powerful one, Bing Xinyue. However, he pretended he didn't know anybody like her!

"Phew..." Guan Lingxiao exhaled. The grass on the roadside was shaking because of his long breath. He said, "Now I believe you are truly a rookie in the martial world. You barely know anything..."

Ye Xiao was surprised.

[That is too easy... I wonder how you came to such a conclusion...]

"Younger Brother, listen. I am Guan Lingxiao. They call me Half Sky!" Guan Lingxiao made sure the young man was totally an ignorant rookie, so he felt better now.

He was again more confident than he should all of a sudden. He felt so good about himself and spoke as if he was giving Ye Xiao some life-saving suggestions, "The first thing you must remember in the martial world is that you must remember every superior cultivator you meet in the world. Even if you have just heard of the names, you must remember them all. When you get in trouble someday, sometimes you need those names to get you out of the danger. Do you understand? Isn't it so enlightening?"

Ye Xiao nodded. "Brilliant. Enlightening."

Guan Lingxiao laughed and said, "Good! The boy is worth teaching. Now, do you remember me?"

Ye Xiao was blank. And then he nodded, "Yes! Resounding! How can I forget about you?"

He was apparently lying with the word resounding, but he was telling the truth that he wouldn't forget such a weirdo. In fact, for a long long time after, he wouldn't be able to forget this man!

It was not easy to forget such a hilarious man.

Guan Lingxiao laughed loudly and went on talking, "Well, the martial world..." He talked a lot about the stories in the martial world and gave Ye Xiao some advice. After that, he stopped and asked, "Where are you heading?"

Ye Xiao looked at the tall and vigorous man. This man gave people an image of power, vigor, strength, and greatness at first sight... Ye Xiao couldn't believe that he turned out to be a chatterbox!

An absolute... superior chatterbox.

Ye Xiao truly wanted to ask him something. [Do you think you deserve the great body the nature blessed you with? You have a body that all men want, yet you have a mouth of a nagging woman!]

[Is that right?]

However, he just thought of it but didn't ask him.

He didn't dare to!

He could sense the big man's cultivation strength. It was definitely much higher than his.

If he recklessly asked such an impolite question, he would definitely be beaten up to death! That was not a wise thing to do!

"Brother Guan, I am new to the martial world. I barely learned anything yet. May I ask about your cultivation level since you already have such a resounding title? What level are you at?" Ye Xiao humbly asked.

Guan Lingxiao paced around with his two long legs and looked around. In a pretentious way, he blandly said, "I am just a few

years older than you. Of course, I should be a bit stronger than you. I am only level nine of Dream Origin Stage. I still have one step to take to reach Dao Origin Stage. Not worth mentioning."

Ye Xiao was still riding on the pony, yet Guan Lingxiao was still half a head higher than him. He was so tall. Other than that, he walked no slower than Ye Xiao's pony.

"One step to Dao Origin Stage. Impressive..." Ye Xiao said.

[Level nine of Dream Origin Stage? Not even the top of level nine? How is that one step to Dao Origin Stage... Can't you just stop pretending to be something? At the very least, even if you are Dao Origin Stage now, is it really something worth showing off?]

"Heh, heh. I am flattered. There are lots of people who are in a higher level than me in Qing-Yun Realm." Guan Lingxiao blandly spoke and kept showing off, "However... at least I am one of the influential figures in this world."

"How outstanding!" Ye Xiao praised insincerely.

Guan Lingxiao laughed and said, "You and me, we met each other because of a song. I felt like I have known you for a long time when I saw you for the first sight, Younger Brother. I don't have any other advantages. I am just good at making friends. I especially like to take care of the rookies who are new to the martial world. My heart is pretty soft sometimes... Heh, heh..."

Ye Xiao nodded. "It's so kind of you, Brother Guan."

He thoroughly knew what the truth really was.

Guan Lingxiao was such a swaggering man. Ye Xiao surely wouldn't like to listen to his bragging, and neither would all the experienced cultivators.

He was simply bragging in front of the rookies. That was all. He wasn't that powerful after all...

Well, at some point, he wasn't lying when he said he liked to take

care of rookies...

The biggest reason must be that giving advice to rookies was his only chance to show his strength.

"When you first get in the martial world, you better get yourself a company. If you get an experienced company at the beginning, it would be much better." Guan Lingxiao obviously tried to give Ye Xiao a suggestion, "It will make things much safer for you at least. However, there aren't many nice people in this place. So when you meet one, you better cherish him."

"Hmm. That's true. Brother Guan, thanks." Ye Xiao tried not to laugh.

"Look, when you meet someone like that, you must be careful about your attitude. Never break his heart. It is definitely not a wise thing to anger a man with a warm heart." Guan Lingxiao spoke righteously, "For example, sometimes you can give him some money as a thank you for his help. That would make both of you feel good along the way."

Ye Xiao understood what he wanted. He took out a few spiritual stones and said, "That's true. Brother Guan, look, here are a few stones. Please accept it."

"What do you think you are doing? What? You think I am this kind of person?" Guan Lingxiao glared at Ye Xiao. "What is wrong with you? You think I am asking anything from you?"

[Come on, Big Brother! Of course you are! What else can it be? Don't you want us both to feel better?]

[Just take the stones and we both get through this complex instruction play! Do you have to be so theatrical?]

...

Chapter 892: Black Cavalry Alliance!

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and still tried to spoke enthusiastically, "No, please do not mistake me. I am truly in need of lots of help here. I am new. I can't even find a place to eat and drink. Brother Guan, you know everything that I need. Just take these stones as my share for the meal later. Let's just find somewhere to eat. Brother Guan, you are a generous man. I don't think you would refuse to share a meal with me, would you?"

Guan Lingxiao frowned and nodded. "You are right... Well then, I guess I should keep these small things for you. You trust me like this. How do you know I won't run away with them?"

"Brother Guan, are they more valuable than our connection? The song we like? We are much like brothers now, aren't we?" Ye Xiao said, "If I can't trust Half Sky, Guan Lingxiao, who should I trust in this world then?"

Guan Lingxiao blushed and then spoke spiritedly, "Relax, brother. You will never be left behind."

He slapped on his own chest!

[This guy is definitely self-conscious and also impoverished. He actually thought about taking away the spiritual stones... Those are just a few spiritual stones...]

Guan Lingxiao took away the stones. He tried to be calm, yet the big smile on his face wouldn't lie...

Ye Xiao realized the truth about this man.

[He is actually not that bold...]

[Otherwise, with his strength, if he go out to rob somebody, it must be easy to get some spiritual stones...]

[I guess he is going to be my guard from now on...]

[Well, it is not so bad to have a guard. At least it wouldn't be so

boring on the road!]

...

"Sky Soul Mountain? That is no less than ten thousand miles away..." Guan Lingxiao said and he didn't stop walking ahead. "Let's go then. Hurry. The next three hundred miles are totally empty. There is nowhere to sleep by..."

The two of them started the journey with laughter and a number of conversations.

Guan Lingxiao was a little bit influential somehow. They had met many bandits on the road, but when they saw Guan Lingxiao, they would give up on their plans.

Guan Lingxiao became more triumphant and inflated after that.

However, Ye Xiao was still a bit confused. [Even if you are truly such a man with a warm heart, you... it just doesn't seem right that you came to me just like that?]

[Was it really a coincidence?]

When they walked out about two hundred miles, suddenly, the heavy sound of clops resounded from everywhere. Countless cavalries were getting over to them. They were surrounded.

Guan Lingxiao's face turned extremely dark when he saw it. It was not good.

"What's wrong?" Ye Xiao asked and frowned.

Ye Xiao kept Guan Lingxiao with him because he wanted to avoid troubles. However, if Guan Lingxiao drew more troubles instead, it would be against Ye Xiao's will!

Guan Lingxiao wasn't confident and triumphant anymore. Instead, it seemed he was going to burst in tears at any second. He spoke in a shaking voice, "It is a big trouble..."

Ye Xiao looked at him. Guan Lingxiao was no more vigorous and spirited. The vigor of Half Sky Guan Lingxiao was completely

gone.

The clomp of the cavalries stopped. The dust was rolling up in the air.

There was a group of cavalries in black armors on the road.

Every cavalry was showing a dark face, looking over to them in cold eyes.

Guan Lingxiao stepped behind a bit, ridiculously trying to hide himself behind Ye Xiao. He was too big for that.

"Guan Lingxiao! Show yourself now!" A black-armored man who seemed to be the leader stepped out and stared at Guan Lingxiao with two sharp eyes like shooting arrows. "It isn't right to escape the mistake you made like that! That is not a thing a man should do!"

He was riding a horse, yet he still looked straight up and tall, like a sword pointing up to the sky. When he was talking, he put one of his hands on the sword on the waist, as if he would draw out the sword to kill at any second.

Ye Xiao stared at him and spoke in a light voice, "Black Cavalry Alliance?"

Guan Lingxiao looked pale at the moment. He nodded. He was so panicked that he actually ignored the truth that Ye Xiao was new to the martial world and he shouldn't know about Black Cavalry Alliance.

"What did you do to piss them?" Ye Xiao was curious. How could Guan Lingxiao, such a small figure, mess up with the powerful Black Cavalry Alliance?

It was one of the strongest bandit organizations in the Qing-Yun Realm. Black Cavalry was a group of people even Xiao Monarch wouldn't want to fight against.

Guan Lingxiao was merely level nine of Dream Origin Stage... If

he did mess with Black Cavalry Alliance, how could he survive till the present?

When the smoke rises up eight thousand Zhang [1], there are a hundred thousand black cavalry in hell!

There were one hundred thousand men in Black Cavalry Alliance. They were well armed and disciplined. Each man of the cavalry was beyond Dream Origin Stage. They had suffered a lot to pass the trial and became one of the black rides!

It was not their only features. People wished it was, because that would make them easy be defeat!

However, the most horrible part of them was that each of them was willing to sacrifice all the time! They would kill themselves to destroy the enemy if they had to!

If they were facing some invincible enemy, they would still keep rushing over to die as living weapons one by one, row by row. Each man of the black cavalry would like to sacrifice himself to only cause a slight damage to the enemy.

They would rather let countless of their brothers die just to take the victory.

[I die. He who rides beside me still lives. He dies, whoever rides beside him still lives. As long as the black cavalry exist, our enemy will die!]

That was the most horrible thing about Black Cavalry Alliance.

That was why even a powerful man like Xiao Monarch wouldn't be happy to fight against them!

The black cavalry was getting more and more crowded around them. Ye Xiao started to feel suppressed.

Countless men in black armors showed up in the light of the setting sun, as if all directions in the world were blocked.

However, nobody made a sound. Thousands of horses stayed

together, yet there was no sound of them. What a well trained army! Whoever knew about military would be scared by this.

"Guan Lingxiao, we don't want to force you. You should tell us where that Murderous Dan-making Therapist went!" The man who led the army stared at Guan Lingxiao with a blank face. "You will be safe once you tell me where he is!"

...

[1] Unit of length.

Chapter 893: I Am Going Too!

"Brother Mu, I truly have no idea..." Guan Lingxiao had a pained expression. He shouted, "If I ever lie about this, then I will call myself a bastard!"

The captain was still calm. He spoke in a horrible voice, "I don't care whether you are aware or not. You will die if you don't tell me where he is! You introduced that man. Now you take the responsibility for it!"

Guan Lingxiao was sweating. "Brother Mu, please. I truly have no idea where that fxcking bastard is! I will tell you at the first moment when I know! I was trying to find a good therapist for the young lord of yours. I met that guy in coincidence. I never knew he is such a liar... I didn't know he would just leave like this... I have no idea..."

- Clang! -

The three hundred horsemen who were in front of the crowd drew out their weapons at the same time. Three hundred swords were unsheathed, yet it only made one sound.

Ye Xiao couldn't help but praise it sincerely. That was a result of some real difficult trainings for years!

Guan Lingxiao was shaking when he saw that. He forcibly swallowed what he was going to say immediately.

Ye Xiao was listening to the conversation. He noticed that the situation was going worse, so he interrupted, "Is the honorific young lord injured? Is that why you need a dan-maker to save him?"

The captain squinted at him but didn't say anything.

Ye Xiao said, "I met Brother Guan Lingxiao not for a long time, but I know he is kind-hearted. I don't think he would harm your interest on purpose. If he did, he wouldn't still stay in this place. Is

the honorific young lord injured? Sick? Poisoned?

"A difficult disease?

"All dan-makers you know couldn't cure him?

"Brother Guan Lingxiao want to be close to Black Cavalry, or maybe you guys have posted a reward for it, so he found a dan-maker for you?

"A man who called himself 'Murderous Dan-making Therapist' went to Guan Lingxiao? He said he could bring the man back from death, so Guan Lingxiao took him to Black Cavalry?

"You surely have heard of the name 'Murderous Dan-making Therapist', otherwise, you wouldn't let him go on with the treatment? However, things didn't go well. Did that therapist have any evil plan in mind?

"He didn't cure the young lord, instead, he messed about with it?

"After doing all that he shouldn't do, he disappeared? You couldn't find him anymore, so you have to blame it to Guan Lingxiao, because it is Guan Lingxiao who introduced that man to you?

"Even though you know Guan Lingxiao certainly doesn't know where that therapist is, you decided to try it. Maybe Guan Lingxiao knows. Am I right?"

It seemed Ye Xiao had brought up lot of questions. In fact, the question didn't need to be answered, because Ye Xiao already had the answers.

That captain, whom Guan Lingxiao called Brother Mu looked at Ye Xiao. He was honestly shocked.

[The young man knew nothing about all he just said.]

[Guan Lingxiao didn't tell him anything. None of us has told him anything.]

[What he knows are everything that is said in the conversation.

That's all. Yet he actually said so many of the truth. That's impressive.]

Brother Mu blandly said, "It is roughly the same as you said, young man."

"Our young lord has made a post of reward for a therapist or a dan-maker. Guan Lingxiao introduced that Murderous Dan-making Therapist to us, and took the big pack of money away. The therapist didn't cure our young lord. Instead, he poisoned our young lord!"

He coldly continued, "He is connected to Guan Lingxiao. Guan Lingxiao is definitely not as innocent as he acts! He introduced that therapist and took a huge money from us. Now that things have gone far worse, of course we should blame him. If he can find that therapist and save our lord, there is room for negotiation. If not, if our young lord dies, Guan Lingxiao, you know what will happen!"

Guan Lingxiao was wronged. He said, "Brother Mu, come on. I was thrilled by that money. That is true. But I also sincerely wanted to solve the problem for you. That is why I worked so hard to find a famous therapist for the young lord. That murderous and sh*tty bastard is totally my bad luck. I did that due to kindness and sincerity... please..."

Brother Mu was untouched. He said, "I don't care what you think. Didn't you take that money from us? The problem is that our young lord became worse because of the man you introduced! His injury didn't get cured and he is poisoned! Who should we blame if we don't blame you for that?"

Guan Lingxiao was shocked. He had nothing to said anymore.

"No matter what you think, Guan Lingxiao, you can't escape the responsibility." Brother Mu spoke with a cold voice, "Now, are you coming with us? Or should we force you to come?"

Guan Lingxiao looked in trouble. He looked around and gritted

his teeth. "I am going with you! But this young man here, he is new to this world. I barely know him. We met each other earlier today. I was planning to earn some money from him. That's all. I was guarding him on the way, and also trying to get myself away from this place. He has nothing to do with all this! I'll go with you, but you have to let him free!"

Ye Xiao was surprised. [This Guan Lingxiao is surprisingly a man of honor.]

Brother Mu coldly said, "We won't hurt innocent people! Make way for the young man!"

Hundreds of horsemen moved aside at the same time, making a ten meters wide path in the crowd.

Guan Lingxiao looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Brother, go now. I wanted to keep you safe till you get to Sky Soul Mountain, but... I guess it's time to say goodbye. So long... Maybe if we have the chance to meet again."

Actually, for Ye Xiao, it was better not to get involved into any troubles. After spending some time with Guan Lingxiao on the road, he didn't like Guan Lingxiao that much now. He didn't want to get involved at the beginning. However, what Guan Lingxiao said at the end changed his mind.

He thought for a while and said, "In fact, Brother Guan is not the key of this problem. You don't have to find that therapist though. What you need is to cure your young lord. I am not in a hurry to Sky Soul Mountain. I can go with you. I know something about dan-making. Maybe I can help the young lord's situation. If it truly is beyond my capability, I will leave then."

...

Chapter 894: King of Horses!

Guan Lingxiao was aghast. He hurriedly stopped Ye Xiao, "What the hell is in your mind your stupid rookie? Don't you know what danger is? You are not going to get away if you come with me!"

The captain's eyes lit up. "You know about dan-making. Younger Brother, are you a dan-maker or a pharmacist?"

Ye Xiao ignored Guan Lingxiao. He nodded and said, "I happen to know something about both. Since you are not going to let go of any possibility, I guess you won't turn me down."

"That's true. Accept my appreciation. Come with us. If you really can help, Black Cavalry Alliance will remember your favor forever."

The captain was thrilled, but when he thought of Ye Xiao's age, he sighed.

[What does he know? He's too young after all. All teenagers have the same problem. They are too ignorant. I guess he just knows something about medicines and dan. Anyway... he is right. We won't let go of any possibility. Young lord will die at any second. This is the last moment. I have to try everything!]

[Guan Lingxiao most likely know nothing about that Murderous Therapist!]

Guan Lingxiao knew that it was decided and nobody could change Brother Mu's mind now. He looked at Ye Xiao helplessly and made a long sigh. Eventually, he started to walk in big strides again.

Ye Xiao smiled and urged the pony by kicking it. "Ya!"

The pony suddenly neighed loudly and stood up with two feet. Its bristle was flying up. Before its forepaws touched the floor, it shot out like a shooting arrow.

"Good horse!"

All the horsemen's eyes lit up. They had been living on the back of horses for half of their lives. They were sensitive about horses. They saw the pony run and recognized it as an absolute valuable horse.

Ye Xiao blandly smiled and tapped on the pony's head. He said, "Darky, you got some really strong feet there. I guess you won't waste my time."

[Darky...] The captain, Brother Mu, was speechless.

[He actually gave this wonderful horse such a stupid name.]

Darky started running in front of everybody. It ran pass all the horses of the black cavalry, with its head high. It looked ahead, as if it was a king running on his own land watching his own army.

All the horses of the black cavalry were quietly standing. They slightly lowered their heads as they watched the little horse rush out from the crowd. After their masters gave them orders to move, they started to run.

Darky was leading the way.

All horses of the black cavalry were following it, like a stream of dark tide.

All the black cavalry were annoyed. No matter how they tried to urge their horses, none of the horses could surpass the little horse.

Darky kept a certain distance with the other horses.

Even Captain Mu's horse was slightly behind Darky. No matter how Captain Mu urged his favorite horse, the horse didn't run any faster.

He even whipped it twice, yet the horse was still keeping the distance to Darky.

After a while, Captain Mu noticed that his horse was looking at Darky in an extremely flattering way!

It was like a guilty official begging for his king's mercy!

All of a sudden!

Captain Mu realized something! He exclaimed, "King of horses?"

Darky was running fast. It looked so fit and lusty. But that was all that could be told about it. It didn't seem to be any better than the other horses.

However, it was leading all those horses running across the land like flood. It was quiet all the time when it was running. The horses followed it silently as if they would follow Darky till the end of the world.

"Wrong direction..." Captain Mu shouted angrily, "Turn! Turn! Haw!"

Darky ignored him. It just kept running.

The other horses didn't care about the right direction either. They were not the horses they used to be at the moment. They just kept following Darky. It felt like they would always follow that pony no matter where it went.

Even if it ran towards a cliff, as long as it jumped down the cliff, the other horses would all jump down without any hesitation.

The black cavalry were all scolding their own horses. They wanted their horses to change the direction. However, even though they were holding their horses' necks, the horses were only running behind Darky.

They wouldn't change!

They would rather die!

Ye Xiao was a bit speechless too.

He couldn't believe his little horse actually led a riot of hundreds of horses... It actually did this...

He gently slapped on Darky's head and said, "Come on. Do you

know where to go? Why are you running like this... Just slow down a bit, will you?"

Darky neighed. It meant, 'Nobody's leading the way anyway... Why can't I just go where I want to...'

Ye Xiao was both annoyed and delighted. [You are showing your king's vigor to the other horses. No horse in the world dares to run in front of you! Alright?]

Ye Xiao forcibly made Darky slow down. Captain Mu's horse finally ran ahead under Ye Xiao's permission.

It was running so cautiously and nervously. Captain Mu had been riding this horse for so many years. He was sure he would never fall off the back of this horse. However, this time, he nearly fell down the horse because for several times, the horse suddenly turned stiff.

The thousands of other horses seemed furious. They were all looking at Captain Mu's horse like they wanted to chew it alive. [Bastard horse! How dare you run in front of the king!]

[Do you want to die?]

They were well trained in the Black Cavalry Alliance after all. Otherwise, they would have rushed over and kicked that poor horse to death for a long time!

"Neigh..." The poor horse was making a statement to the other horses. 'I don't want this either, alright? I am forced... The king doesn't know where to go... I am simply leading the way... How could I surpass the king... Look at me! Look carefully at me! I am so cautious not to surpass the king, alright...'

"Neigh..." Thousands of the horses replied, 'Bastard! The king is omnipotent! Are you telling me he doesn't know the way? Even I know the way! You god damn bastard! You must have evil thoughts in your mind... You are going to commit treason...'

...

Chapter 895: King Descended!

Darky ran with its chest up, enjoying the admiration from all the other horses. It was spirited.

"Brother Ye..." Captain Mu's eyes lit up with fever, "Your horse... is the king of horses! That is..."

Ye Xiao was surprised. He said, "King of horses? Darky?"

Captain Mu nearly fell off the horse.

[Come on, brother. Can't you stop calling it that name?]

Ye Xiao was quite innocent though.

[What is going on?]

[I told Erhuo to get me a horse, because it is too tiring to walk for a long time.]

[Erhuo ran into the forest right away.]

[After half a day, Darky was running over to me and I found Erhuo arrogantly sitting on Darky's head...]

Ye Xiao didn't recognize Darky as any valuable horse because of its size. That was why he casually gave it the name, Darky.

A great horse should have a great body. That was true. Good horse was always tall and big. Darky was too small for a great horse. Ye Xiao needed a pony to carry him, and he wasn't in a hurry. So he accepted Darky. Besides, Darky ran pretty fast...

However, he never expected Darky, the pony, was a great horse, the king of horses!

Ye Xiao exclaimed 'holy heavens' in the head and thought, [In fact this is reasonable. Erhuo would never pick an ordinary horse.]

[Since Erhuo has spent such a long time to find Darky, it should be the best of the best!]

"Black hair, dark bristle, white hoof, narrow neck, long waist,

long legs..." Captain Mu looked at Darky with obsessed eyes, like a horny old man who hadn't had sex for over a dozen years suddenly got married, staring at his beautiful bride in the night of the wedding day—he simply wanted to swallow her immediately...

"So pretty... the king of horses indeed..." Captain Mu said.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Pretty... he said the horse was pretty...]

[That was... unbelievable...]

Ye Xiao didn't notice that Captain Mu was actually alerted...

If Ye Xiao was his enemy, it would be a horrible threat to Black Cavalry Alliance.

He could simply stir the entire Black Cavalry Alliance up by using Darky, the king of horses he had!

It was the power of Darky!

Animals don't talk, but they communicate. All the other horses would be compelled to submit to their king!

Nobody, no matter how powerful, not even Wu Fa, could destroy Black Cavalry Alliance alone.

However, for Darky, it was a piece of cake. All Darky needed to do was to neigh loudly!

Black Cavalry Alliance would be destroyed by Darky!

Captain Mu couldn't go on the thought of it. He nearly scared himself to death!

He wanted Ye Xiao to come with him, because he thought there might be an opportunity that the latter could cure his young lord. However, what if Ye Xiao turned out to a horrible disaster...

Actually, nobody had ever heard that the king of horses could be tamed by any human... How could such a proud animal submit to a human being and become somebody's ride?

It should be utterly persevering!

What happened to Darky?

After the time of a meal, there was the entrance of an alley ahead of them.

They had reached the destination, so Captain Mu's horse didn't dare to be in front of the crowd anymore.

That was a clever horse.

[We arrived already. How dare I run in front of the king? If the tens of thousands of brothers and sisters in the valley see me running ignorantly ahead of the king, they would kick me to death before the sky turns dark tonight. I will never swagger around in front of the king, but they wouldn't believe me... It is desecrating the stateliness of the king... Ah... How miserable my life is...]

The valley was extremely quiet.

It was unimaginably strange to call a valley quiet.

The valley ought to be quiet, then why was it strange to call it so?

Because there were over thousands of horses gathering in this valley! How could such a valley be so quiet?

However, it was actually this quiet!

Every horse in the valley stayed so quiet. They waved their tails and ate the fodder in the manger, looking around with their soft eyes. It seemed to be a peaceful and serene day.

Tens of thousands people of the Black Cavalry Alliance were everywhere in the valley. Some of them were having a quiet conversation, some were gently washing their horses, while the others were doing something else.

All in all, the entire valley was full of peace and warmth.

When a rapid and loud neigh echoed out, the silence and peace

were broken.

In fact, what truly broke the peace was...

The horses in the valley seemed to sense something. They all stood up and stayed still almost the same time. They all looked to the entrance of the valley at the same time.

All horses were anxiously swaying their tails and making slight sounds in the nose.

Their ears were flicking. It seemed they were listening to something. The men in the valley who had been living with their horses for years knew that there must be something wrong.

The horses weren't actually anxious or nervous. In fact, they were more like excited and thrilled.

The horsemen didn't understand why their horses were excited? What for? That sound was obviously the return of the men who had gone out for a mission earlier. People returned to the valley at least ten times in a day. The horses should have gotten used to it long ago. They wouldn't even move their eyes when they heard that. Why did they act so weird this time?

[What is wrong?]

"Neigh..."

A long shout burst at the entrance of the valley. It was sharp as if it was resounding through the clouds to the sky.

The long shout contained the overwhelming stateliness! It resounded between the sky and earth!

People didn't understand it. They didn't know what that sound meant.

However, the horses were different.

'Here I come! The king descends!'

...

Chapter 896: Cause and Effect

"Neigh..." Suddenly, tens of thousands of horses stood up with their forepaws up, neighing to the sky, showing their respect and submission to the king.

The sound of the horses shouting together shocked the people in the valley. They nearly passed out because of the sudden burst of sound.

The sound of the horses suddenly resounded in the valley and blew the dust and fallen leaves up to the sky fast.

Before the neigh stopped, a dark little horse with four white hooves ran into the valley in front of the others!

When it entered the valley, the valley immediately returned to silence.

The horses that had been cheering and neighing a moment earlier suddenly became quiet like sleeping babies, so lovely, so adorable.

Darky was the only horse running and swaggering in the valley. It looked like a dragon moving beautifully, as if the valley was its own territory!

Ye Xiao was riding Darky, showing a handsome face, with his hair fluttering in the wind.

He was pretty much like a beautiful jade while Darky was like a dragon. A man and a horse gave a brilliant performance in the valley!

Everybody was shocked. Nobody knew what to do next.

[What is going on?]

[What the hell is this?]

[I heard the sound of our men. They must have finished their job out there. But... where are they now? How come a stranger riding

his horse swaggered in like this?]

[Captain Mu and his men are the only group of people out there on a mission. They should have caught Guan Lingxiao.]

[Who is this young man?]

When Captain Mu arrived, he apparently became a side character of this play. When he got in the valley, he felt the hostile gazes from the others in the valley.

Maybe it was a bad day for him and his horse. His horse was unwelcomed to the other horses while he somehow annoyed the others too! How sad!

A big man stood on the way like a steel tower and shouted, "Mu Zichong! What are you doing? What the hell are you doing? What did we send you to do? What is all this? What's your explanation?"

Mu Zichong got off the horse and hurriedly rushed over. "Prime Captain, please... This isn't my fault... Look... That young man, he is a dan-maker..."

"Dan-maker? So what? Since when can a dan-maker can swagger in our place like a king..." The big man was annoyed. "Don't you think maybe you showed him too much respect?"

Mu Zichong was so upset. "I didn't know things would turn this way... The horse of his is the king of horses... I would say how lucky we are that the horses didn't betray us..."

"You let that man come. Now you are telling me you know nothing. You are definitely... Wait! King of horses?" The big man suddenly looked at Mu Zichong with two widely opened eyes.

"What did you just say? The... The king of horses?"

"That's it! The king of horses! Even more overwhelming than we ever heard of from the tales!"

"Holy heavens!"

The big man stared at Darky with fever in his eyes. He couldn't

look away anymore. The longer he stared at Darky, the brighter his eyes became. He kept rubbing his lower jaw and murmured, "It isn't fully grown yet. It must be about one year old. But... It is already bigger than it should be... Look at its hooves. How beautiful when it walked... It moved so smoothly... Ah... Such a great horse!"

"What is its name? That king of horses?" the big man was still looking at Darky when he asked.

Mu Zichong looked awkward and said, "It's... Dar... Darky..."

"Darky..." The big man was surprised. He then turned furious. "Mu Zichong! How dare you call my nickname! How bodacious!"

"..." Mu Zichong was speechless.

[What? Your nickname is Darky? I didn't know it. I didn't mean it. Really. I just told you that horse's name. I didn't know! I can't believe the great king of horses has such a stupid name, and it is your nickname... What a waste!]

Another big man showed up and stopped the awkwardness by changing the topic. "What are you two quarreling for? Where is Guan Lingxiao?"

Another man came from the east side. "What do you think you are doing? Mind your behaviors!"

One more came from the west side. "Quiet! Are you committing treason?"

After a few thundering shouts, it became calm and quiet again.

Mu Zichong bowed to the leaders and reported what had happened earlier.

When the men knew he had brought Guan Lingxiao back, they suddenly felt angry. They wished they could beat Guan Lingxiao up.

When they knew there was a dan-maker who followed Guan

Lingxiao back, they started to have a glimmer of hope that their lord would be cured.

When they heard the horse of the dan-maker was the king of horses, they were astonished.

In the end, when they knew the king of horses was named Darky, they burst in laughter! It was the Prime Captain's nickname!

It was such a coincidence!

For once, there was delighted laughter in the valley.

That was the first time in over two years.

When Ye Xiao went to the main camp of the Black Cavalry Alliance, which was located inside the mountain, he had a complex feeling.

He knew Black Cavalry Alliance was a huge organization. This was his first time to truly see it. It must be even more powerful than how people described them! When he saw the team of Mu Zichong, he was impressed. Now as he saw the basement of this disciplined organization, he was amazed and shocked!

They had emptied the inside of a big mountain to build the main camp of Black Cavalry Alliance.

Not any ordinary sect could do this!

However, it was not the only thing that shocked Ye Xiao... The name of this organization shocked him at the moment!

Ye Xiao was quite familiar with this name, Black Cavalry Alliance.

He never had any business with this organization, but he had heard a lot about it.

Fierce Blade, Li Wuliang, told him much about Black Ride Alliance.

This place reminded him of his best friend.

Li Wuliang only had one sworn friend and one sworn brother.

The sworn brother was Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao, while the other was the head of Black Cavalry Alliance, Shangguan Zhuifeng!

...

Chapter 897: In the Black Cavalry Alliance

After Li Wuliang died in the fight against the three factions, Black Cavalry Alliance sent out all their men to destroy lots of the subbranches of the three factions within two months. That was why when the three factions fought against Ye Xiao, they didn't have much support from the remote areas.

When Black Cavalry Alliance was going to fight head-on with the main force of the three factions, Shangguan Zhuifeng suddenly had a stroke. It all happened within half a day. The lower half of his body was disabled. Even though he was utterly furious, he couldn't make further attacks anymore. Black Cavalry Alliance temporarily lost its most powerful leader, so the revenge stopped.

When the leader of a big organization like Black Cavalry Alliance suffered from a disease, usually, somebody would think of snatching the seat of power, although the leader was still alive. However, every horsemen part of the cavalry was an honorable man. Shangguan Zhuifeng had a great reputation in the alliance. Even though he was suffering from the stroke, nobody would usurp his seat. Eventually, under all the black cavalry's recommendation, Shangguan Zhuifeng's son, the young lord, took the seat to lead the alliance.

However, the young lord, Shangguan Tie, the head of the Black Cavalry Alliance was targeted on the back.

Ye Xiao had been gathering information from the black cavalry when they were talking on the backs of the horses. Shangguan Tie was attacked half a year after his father got a stroke!

The father and son encountered adversity in such a short time. The Black Cavalry Alliance didn't fall to pieces because of that, but it was not as powerful as before anymore.

Xiao Monarch had died when it happened to Black Cavalry Alliance...

Now, under the arrangement of fate, Ye Xiao finally met the black cavalry. It reminded him a lot of the past.

To help Black Cavalry Alliance was to help his brother Li Wuliang. Of course, he would come to help.

Because Black Cavalry Alliance had sought revenge for Li Wuliang, Ye Xiao felt that he should help them.

"Our young lord is inside. Please wait a minute here." It was the chief of all captains, who was temporarily in charge of the alliance, Mountain Sword, Luo Chong.

He was level seven of Dao Origin Stage. He didn't seem spirited for the high position he obtained. Instead, he seemed worried and sad. He looked tired on every bit of his face. As a level seven Dao Origin Stage cultivator, he seemed too exhausted.

It was obvious that he wasn't enjoying the days to be the head of the entire alliance. Instead, he was tired because of the great responsibility.

"How is the young lord?" Ye Xiao asked.

Guan Lingxiao was right behind him. He didn't dare to be away. He could see it from the others in the valley that if he was distant enough to Ye Xiao, he would be beaten up to death immediately...

Sometimes, to do something with good intentions would lead to a bad result. That was also a serious mistake! It was much more terrible than simply following an evil mind!

Ye Xiao was Guan Lingxiao's only hope to survive this.

As long as Ye Xiao could do something to help, no need to cure the young lord, just to make him feel better, Guan Lingxiao would be saved...

Otherwise, nobody knew what crazy things the despairing Black Cavalry Alliance would do to him.

Guan Lingxiao didn't mean to do this, but he introduced the man

who did it. He couldn't escape this!

"Not good." Luo Chong made a heavy sigh and frowned. His skinny face had a few clear wrinkles.

"For now, the elders of our alliance are supporting the young lord with their life energy... Once they have run out of power and stop..." Luo Chong was suppressing himself—it was as if there was a volcano hidden deep inside his eyes.

He was suppressing his emotions. Once it burst out, it could destroy lots of things!

Ye Xiao nodded and walked faster.

In a secret room inside the mountain, six men were sitting cross-legged on a bed. One of them was holding the young lord's head by one hand. Four of the others each grabbed a foot or a hand of the young lord. The last one was holding his dantian. The six of them kept pouring spiritual energy into the young lord so that he could stay alive.

There were twelve more people who were sitting elsewhere in the room. They were in meditation, recovering themselves.

The eighteen men were the eighteen superiors of Black Cavalry Alliance.

Shangguan Tie's last chance relied on the life energy of these men.

The moment these men ran out of energy, he would die!

Ye Xiao was surprised.

These people were risking their lives.

If they kept doing this for three months, not only Shangguan Tie, but also the eighteen superiors would die because of exhaustion!

In fact... as Ye Xiao saw, a few of the eighteen men had already consumed more of their energy than they could handle. They were all seriously injured. Even if they stopped right away, they couldn't

be improved in cultivation ever in the future. They couldn't even return to their prime condition!

Ye Xiao wasn't the only one who knew it. The eighteen men all knew it. However, they still did it without any hesitation. None of them was indolent. They were obviously stouthearted men.

There was an old man sitting on a chair, with a blanket on his knees, watching the young lord with concerns.

This old man was exactly the great leader of the alliance, Shangguan Zhuifeng.

People in this room were all superior cultivators. They were busy taking care of the young lord, but they still could notice the movements outside the door. When Ye Xiao came in, they just squinted then quickly looked away.

He was too young!

Even though he was truly a dan-maker, they didn't believe he could actually do anything at such a young age!

There used to be lots of genius of dan art, but even them still needed time to learn. Young dan-maker could never have any brilliant capability. All cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm agreed with this!

Ye Xiao walked close to the bed, but nobody made room for him. He frowned and squeezed himself in. He put his fingers on Shangguan Tie's wrist.

It was actually rude and reckless. As expected, people started to look at him with hostility.

"Who's this guy?" An old man shouted, "Whose kid is this? Don't you know where we are? How dare you..."

Before he finished, Ye Xiao blandly spoke with his eyes closed, "The young lord is suffering three different kinds of wounds. His Jing and Mai are seriously damaged."

"Seven Wounds Palm. He has been hit at least three times by Seven Wounds Palm attacks. His inner organs are all shook and injured. The man who attacked him must be over level five of Dao Origin stage."

"Jing Breaking Fist. It damaged the Jing vein inside the body. Nearly half of it was damaged. A man could never cultivate both Seven Wounds Palm and Jing Breaking Fist. This was another man. He should be about level four of Dao Origin Stage. It was weaker than the other palm attack. That's lucky."

...

Chapter 898: How Many Enemies

As Ye Xiao spoke, the others all turned silent. Nobody questioned him anymore.

They all knew what he just said.

However, they had spent a long time to come to this conclusion. They knew who the attackers were before they made the conclusion. None of them had ever told anybody else.

All the dan-makers or therapists who had come didn't know the real situation.

It concerned too many secrets.

However, Ye Xiao knew almost all about the situation by just holding the wrist of the young lord. He must be good at this.

The real expert had shown his capability, how dare the others look down upon him anymore?

Ye Xiao poured a slight stream of spiritual qi into Shangguan Tie's body. He closed his eyes and slowly said, "Jing Breaking Fist must touch the young lord to cause damage, especially when it is in a low level. That is why I know the man who used the fist attack should be weaker.

"Mai Blocking Finger... the young lord just got hit once by the finger attack. However, it was much more murderous than the other two attacks. The man who used the finger attack should be facing the young lord when he did it. After this attack, the fight was done. The man who did this must be the most powerful one of the three.

"All the inner organs of the young lord has been damaged. His Jing and Mai are broken in many places. He has been wounded for a long time. I think he is dying now. It is close to impossible to cure him.

"I guess, the young lord must have tried everything he could to get back from the attackers even though he was seriously injured in the end. He made it back in good luck, right?" Ye Xiao kept his eyes closed. "He escaped... but he was utterly damaged. Because he had run back like that, it damaged him more. However, if he didn't do it, he would have died out there. It is better to risk his life to try than to wait for death."

Nobody mentioned this before, because nobody ever realized this.

They were impressed by this young man now.

Suddenly, everybody wanted him to go on. They wanted to know more. Even though he said the young lord was close to impossible to be cured, they still waited for Ye Xiao to say something positive.

"If these are all he is suffering, there is still hope to cure him. There are lots of valuable materials in the Qing-Yun Realm. If we can keep him breathing and provide him with lots of valuable materials, day by day, he will be saved. However... there is a chronic poison deep inside his body. It is consuming his life bit by bit. That is the most difficult part.

"The poison was severe, but it wasn't formed within a short time. He had it for a long time... I am afraid it is more than a year...

"That means he has been chronically poisoned for years... Somebody has done this for a long time... Whoever did this has the chance to use this kind of poison. He must be somebody special. He... must be close to the young lord!"

That was such a stunning conclusion!

Everybody was shocked.

Especially the old man, Shangguan Zhuifeng. He was furious.

"I guess I should just be frank. This poison is special. It should always be eaten in a certain amount, no more, no less to be effective. It is important to handle the amount of the poison... One

more thing, a small amount of this poison can make any food become more delicious...

"The most convenient way to do this is to put the poison into the soup... Day after day, the poison gathers inside the body. When the young lord was attacked, his immunity decreased, and the poison burst.."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "What I said, it is not an ordinary theory. It is reasonable that you might question it. I just want to tell you what I know so that it will enlighten you. Maybe you have never seen this poison, but most of you must have heard of it. This poison comes from a flower... Heartbroken Flower."

The others were all enlightened when he said the name of the flower.

There was exactly a poisonous flower they heard in the myth.

It wasn't a strong poison, but it could be accumulated. When it burst after accumulated for a long time, it was fatal.

"As it is said, when it is accumulated to a certain point, it will burst and kill whoever is poisoned, no matter how powerful he is."

Ye Xiao was still closing his eyes. He blankly said, "Thus, the young lord is severely damaged, so his immunity dropped, and the poison started to affect his body. After he got injured, he stopped having that soup, so the poison stayed inside him but hasn't truly caused any fatal damage yet. In fact, the heavy wounds he is suffering right now has saved him from the poison. If he keeps taking the soup and the poison accumulates more, I am afraid..."

What would happen then?

The others all knew the answer. They were frightened.

Shangguan Zhuifeng sat on the wheelchair. His eyes were full of ferocity and killing intent. His hands were holding the handles of the chair so tightly. Suddenly, he broke the handles into pieces by just grabbing them.

Ye Xiao ignored it. He opened his eyes, and when he saw the others, he continued, "He is suffering both inside and outside wounds. The poison is indistinct. That is tricky, but it is still curable. However, there is one more thing in the young lord that shocks me. There is a mass of extreme cold qi hidden inside his body... It is a special power. I reckon it must be a martial art that only women can cultivate.

"Luckily, that woman must still be weak in cultivation. The young lord must have been defenseless when she attacked him... Or maybe when she attacked him, he didn't notice...

"Five different kinds of wounds working together on him. He must be suffering a great deal. It is a miracle that he is still alive.

"This is severe enough to get him killed. However, your enemy seems to be quite cautious. When you are looking for people who can save your young lord, your enemy sent a fake therapist to poison him again!

...

Chapter 899: Laughter of the Monarch; Hero of Eternity!

"This poison is Dream Soul Powder! It is a drastic poison!" Ye Xiao opened his eyes and said, "I don't know how many enemies you have or your young lord have, but I guess there must be a lot. They all want to get the young lord killed!"

He made a sigh.

Shangguan Zhuifeng was gasping. He stared at Ye Xiao and said, "Young man, you are right. However, I just want to know one thing... Can he be saved?"

Ye Xiao looked at him in the eyes.

Shangguan Zhuifeng spoke with a gasp, "Who did this, how they did it, how to seek revenge, how to vent the anger, let's put them all away for now. What's important now... is my son's life!"

His eyes were filled with anger and a slight sorrow.

Apparently, he must have figured out who wanted to get his son killed.

"Hmm..." Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "Yes!"

Yes!

Everybody was spirited and stared at him with wide-opened eyes.

"Then... Please... Young brother..." Shangguan Zhuifeng sounded sobbing. His voice was shaking. He suddenly lost his words.

"Not only your son can be saved, your legs can be saved too," Ye Xiao said.

- Boom! -

The room was boiling.

The elders were shocked that they couldn't control their breaths.

They started to cough and nearly got themselves choked.

"However, you have to fully trust me. You have to do everything I say. First of all, you must find something for me." Ye Xiao said, "Without those things, nobody can save the young lord."

The crowd stopped boiling.

Some of them started to doubt.

[Fully trust you? Do everything you say?]

[Why does he sound just like that bloody murderous therapist?]

[Is this... another trick?]

Ye Xiao blandly smiled and said, "I know what you are thinking and hesitating. Let me speak to the old alliance chief. You will have a decision."

He walked to the old man and looked into his eyes. He whispered word by word, "One sword crosses the sky; thousands of horses surpass the wind. Laughter of the Monarch; hero of eternity."

Shangguan Zhuifeng was shocked!

Suddenly, his pale face turned red. He started to gasp heavily what staring at Ye Xiao. He couldn't believe it. He said, "You... You..."

He held the chair and heavily gasped, trying to stand up!

Ye Xiao calmly looked at him and didn't say anything more.

Shangguan Zhuifeng gasped once again. Suddenly, he raised his head and closed his eyes. Tears rolled down on his cheeks. He gasped and gasped.

The room was silent!

The old chief, who was so tough that even when his legs were broken, he didn't exclaim, actually shed tears!

"No more b*llshit! No more hesitation! Do whatever he says! Now!"

Shangguan Zhuifeng closed his eyes while shedding tears, then he suddenly gave the toughest order he had ever made, "Nobody violates his commands! Whoever violates... will be expelled from Black Cavalry Alliance!"

[Expelled?]

[That is the most severe punishment in Black Cavalry Alliance!]

For the black cavalry, this was much worse than death!

They couldn't believe their old chief actually trusted this young man that much!

They were all shocked. Nobody talked!

[What the hell?]

[What is wrong?]

[Why...]

[What did he just say to our chief?]

[Why did the chief change his mind so quickly?]

The next moment, they believed it did happen. When Shangguan Zhuifeng looked at Ye Xiao, they found that his eyes were full of trust!

They knew this young man must be trustworthy because their chief showed such respect to the young man!

"Brother, what is your name?" Shangguan Zhuifeng sounded gentle and soft. He even talked as if they were in the same age.

"I..." Ye Xiao suddenly stopped midway.

People kept asking about it, Guan Lingxiao, Captain Mu, and the others. It was the most usual thing to do to ask for somebody's name. However, Ye Xiao didn't answer the questions frankly. All they knew was his family name, Ye!

Ye Xiao didn't care about making a new name for himself. He just hadn't thought of a good one yet!

He couldn't use "Ye Xiao" anymore.

In fact, he couldn't use "Ye Chongxiao" either...

Because Ye Chongxiao should be dead.

He had thought of "Feng Zhiling", but considering that once the tunnel connecting the two worlds was opened again... such name might reveal many secrets... If somebody tracked the name and got on the people he cared about in the Land of Han-Yang, they would be in great danger.

However, Shangguan Zhuifeng was asking about it now. He was Li Wuliang's sworn brother. They were now in such a special situation. Ye Xiao couldn't avoid answering it anymore.

However, he didn't have a proper name yet.

"My family name is Ye." Ye Xiao said, "Chief Shangguan, just call me Ye Jun."

It was apparently a fake name that he made up.

The others started to glare at Ye Xiao.

[Chief asked about your name. He has shown you more respect than he should. How dare you, a rookie in the martial world, give him a fake name to palter!]

They thought the old man would be annoyed, even though he wouldn't rage up in such situation!

However, unexpectedly, when Shangguan Zhuifeng heard the name, he became more cautious. He thought for a while and laughed. "Good name! Beautiful name! Brother Ye Jun, now you have told us your name. Look, just tell us what to do. We will do whatever you say."

Some of the others had sharper eyes. They found there was astonishment deep in the chief's eyes.

[Ye Jun is definitely a fake name. Why is chief so shocked?]

[Does the name Ye Jun have any special meaning?]

...

Chapter 900: Immediate Effect!

At the moment, Shangguan Zhuifeng was talking to Ye Xiao in mind connection. "Brother, may I ask, you, Xiao Monarch and Prime Master Jun..." The name Ye Jun reminded him of Ye Xiao and Jun Yinglian immediately.

He hadn't met these two super powerful figures in the Qing-Yun Realm, but he knew they were close to his brother, Li Wuliang!

Ye Xiao looked troubled in the eyes. He blandly replied, "Just acquaintances."

"I see." Shangguan Zhuifeng nodded. He knew it better now.

[It seems this Brother Ye Jun is somehow closely connected to Xiao Monarch and Prime Master Jun...]

"Let's stop the chitchat now. We should get it started quickly. First, before he is cured, everything he eats, I must check first. Second, send all the people you can command to find three medical materials..."

He gave several orders at once. Shangguan Zhuifeng promised all without hesitation. The others were pretty stunned.

Luckily, the medical materials Ye Xiao asked for were ordinary. It wasn't difficult to collect them in one or two days. They just needed to get a big amount. Those who were assigned to collect the materials all took a breath of relief.

The rest that Ye Xiao required wasn't hard, either. It wasn't difficult to accomplish!

After everything was arranged, Ye Xiao took out a jade bottle from inside his clothes and took a dan bead from the bottle. He didn't hesitate and just put it into Shangguan Tie's mouth.

The others didn't know what that was, however, they all smelled a spirited scent from the dan bead when it was taken out from the

bottle. Everybody in the room felt refreshed and relaxed.

Those who had just finished their turns pouring spiritual qi to the young lord suddenly felt energetic. The energy flowed much more smoothly. Their Jing and Mai that had been wounded because of the long term energy transportation suddenly got moistened!

They just smelled the scent of that dan bead, yet it had such a great efficacy on them! This dan bead must be something marvelous!

Everybody was looking forward to it.

After a while, Ye Xiao kept looking at Shangguan Tie's face. The others didn't see any difference, but Ye Xiao suddenly said, "Fine. He is safe for now. Guys, you can draw your energy back. Try to do it slowly though. If the energy is withdrawn too fast, I am afraid it will break the balance of the energy flows inside his body."

The six men who were pouring the energy didn't truly believe it. Shangguan Tie was so close to death. The energy of the six men was the only thing that kept him alive. If they withdrew the energy and something went wrong, the young lord would die immediately. That was not joking.

Shangguan Zhuifeng spoke decisively, "Do it! Do as Brother Ye said!"

The six men started to carefully withdraw their energy bit by bit. When they were doing it, they actually sensed the vitality of their young master's Jing and Mai.

That was like a miracle to them. Since he was poisoned the second time, he had been in a deep coma. Because of the severe wounds, his body completely lost its function of automatic operation. That was why it needed six superior cultivators to pour the energy into his body without stopping.

Shangguan Tie didn't wake up yet. He was still unconscious,

however, the energy in his dantian was starting to run. His dantian was no longer a backwater pond. The energy flow in his body started to slowly circulate. That was a great sign.

As long as his dantian could keep running without help, he would be safe from death.

Even though there was poison in his body and he was suffering both inside and outside wounds, Ye Xiao's dan bead saved him from the edge of hell!

People started to look at Ye Xiao with admiration and newfound respect!

The dan bead was bringing the young lord back from death. They had only heard about such dan in the tales but never truly saw it.

Ye Xiao was a bit awkward when he noticed the way the others looked at him.

[Come on. It's just a Resurrection Dan bead in dan mist level. It isn't even supreme dan. Look how you are stunned...]

[Really? Do you have to be?]

[I think you should go out and learn more. Maybe you are born a bunch of rubes!]

[Besides, he isn't awake yet. Nobody knows whether he will be cured or not.]

[What are you so excited for?]

In fact, Ye Xiao should learn more about these people. In one year, the entire Black Cavalry Alliance had tried everything they could, racked their brains trying to cure their lords, but the only thing they had was failure and disappointment.

They didn't even acquire anything with a temporary efficacy. That was so disappointing and frustrating.

They were almost in despair!

That was why they treated Guan Lingxiao so casually. They were mostly giving up on it, and they knew things wouldn't go any worse.

Ye Xiao just used one dan bead and it worked so well. The prescription Ye Xiao gave them naturally became the most valuable thing in Black Cavalry Alliance!

Shangguan Zhuifeng sent out the three prime elders to collect the materials when he got the prescription!

He then sent everybody out of the room.

"You all have been working too hard these days. Go rest yourselves. I need to talk to Brother Ye. We feel like old friends at the first sight. Oh, right... about Guan Lingxiao, he was trying to help us after all. He didn't want this anyway. He somehow brought Brother Ye to me. That is a great contribution. We should give him a good reward. Go do this now. Do not delay!"

That absolutely shocked the elders of Black Cavalry Alliance.

[We have indeed been working so hard. We do need to rest. But that is not the reason you want us out. You just simply want us to get out...]

[This young man, Ye Jun, is marvelous in curing. The dan bead he used has brightened our eyes. It is true. You need to show gratitude to him or you need to fawn on him. We can understand. But why do you have to say something like old friends in first sight... That sucks to be an excuse!]

[About Guan Lingxiao... Come on... Ye Jun himself insisted to come! Guan Lingxiao has nothing to do with this at all... He didn't find Ye Jun for us...]

[You said we should catch Guan Lingxiao and punish him hard!]

[Your order is still resounding in our ears... Now it becomes rewarding him...]

[That Guan guy is truly a lucky man... But that's all the good side of him...]

...